

Table of Contents

I. The Power of God's Word.....	5
A. The Word of His Grace.....	5
1. God's Grace.....	6
2. Received by Faith.....	7
3. The Word of God is a Person.....	9
Review Questions- Unit 1.....	11
B. The Truth and The Anointing.....	12
1. The Spirit and the Word Agree.....	13
2. The Truth Makes Us Free.....	14
Review Questions- Unit 2.....	15
C. The Symbols of God's Word – Part 1.....	16
1. The Sword of the Spirit.....	16
2. God's Word is a Fire.....	17
3. God's Word is like a Hammer.....	19
4. The Water of God's Word.....	20
5. The Rod of God's Word.....	21
6. God's Word is Medicine.....	22
Review Questions- Unit 3.....	25
D. The Symbols of God's Word – Part 2.....	26
1. God's Word is Incorruptible Seed.....	26
2. The Bread of Life.....	30
3. God's Word is Spiritual Light.....	33
4. A Spiritual Mirror.....	36
5. God's Word is a Solid Rock on which to Stand.....	38
Review Questions- Unit 4.....	40
II. The Creative Force of the Tongue.....	41
A. Man was Created in God's Class.....	42
1. God gave Man Dominion over the Earth.....	42
2. God Created you as a Three Part Being.....	44
3. Spiritual Growth.....	48
Review Questions- Unit 5.....	49

Table of Contents

B. Life and Death are in the Power of the Tongue.....	50
1. It Matters what you Say.....	50
2. What Words will do for you.....	54
3. Me and My Big Mouth.....	56
4. Sanctify your Mouth.....	60
Review Questions- Unit 6.....	64
C. Spiritual Laws.....	65
1. Words – A Creative Force.....	66
2. The Law of Genesis.....	73
3. The Dynamic Kernels.....	79
Review Questions- Unit 7.....	81
III. The Law of Faith.....	82
A. Introduction to Faith.....	83
1. What is Faith?.....	83
2. Now Faith is the Substance.....	86
3. Now Faith is the Evidence.....	88
4. Three Kinds of Faith.....	90
Review Questions- Unit 8.....	94
B. The Word of Faith.....	95
1. Faith versus Works.....	95
2. Two Word of Faith Principles.....	100
Review Questions- Unit 9.....	114
3. Right and Wrong Thinking.....	115
4. Believe with our Head or with our Heart.....	119
5. The Enemies of Faith.....	127
Review Questions- Unit 10.....	142

Table of Contents

C. The Spirit of Faith.....	143
1. Speak to the Mountain.....	144
Review Questions- Unit 11.....	161
2. Calling Those Things That be Not as Though They Were.....	162
3. Believe You Receive.....	172
Review Questions- Unit 12.....	178
D. Faith Works by Love.....	179
1. Faith, the Servant of Love.....	180
2. Love, A Safeguard for your Faith.....	182
E. Hope, The Anchor for the Soul.....	183
1. What we Already Know about Hope.....	184
2. What you May not Know about Bible Hope.....	185
F. By Grace Through Faith.....	189
1. God’s Part and Man’s Part.....	189
2. Faith Releases God’s Grace.....	191
G. According to Your Faith.....	194
1. God is Looking at your Faith, not at your Need.....	195
2. Write your own Ticket with God.....	197
Review Questions- Unit 13.....	199

**First Printing 2009 / Copyright
All Rights Reserved**



Foreword

Hebrews 11:6

And without faith it is impossible to please God, because anyone who comes to him must believe that he exists and that he rewards those who earnestly seek him.

The subject of faith is found all throughout the Bible from Genesis 15:6, when Abraham believed God and it was credited to him as righteousness, to the Book of Revelation when Jesus commended the believers in the early church of Thyatira for holding onto their faith in Revelation 2:18. As stated above, without faith it is impossible to please God or even get saved according to Ephesians 2:8-9.

The number of times Faith is used in the Bible:

	Old Testament	New Testament
Faith:	16	254
Believe and Believed:	28	199
Trust:	<u>79</u>	<u>10</u>
	123	463

Hebrews 6:1-3

Therefore let us leave the elementary teachings about Christ and go on to maturity, not laying again the foundation of repentance from acts that lead to death, and of **faith in God, instruction about baptisms, the laying on of hands, the resurrection of the dead, and eternal judgment. And God permitting, we will do so.**



Interesting that the Bible calls “Faith in God” an “Elementary” teaching about Christ. In other words, it is considered the “Milk” of God’s Word for new Christians to learn. Like in grade school one of the basic life skills we learned is how to read. This fundamental skill empowers us for the rest of our natural life here on earth. Likewise, for us to learn and practice the basic skills of the Biblical laws of faith are the cornerstone for a successful Christian life.

Hence the reason for compiling this material for believers to grow in their knowledge and understanding of this vital subject. Since everything we receive from God is through our faith in His Word, we must grow in this grace from God. Unfortunately there is a lot of misinformation in this area, so this book attempts to clarify many of the misunderstandings concerning faith and its place in the life of the believer. I encourage you to have an open and receptive heart as we plunge together into these wonderful spiritual laws on faith. The key to remember is to not be a forgetful hearer, but to diligently put these Biblical principles into practice in every area of your life. If on any point you are not sure or not in agreement with what is being taught, please pray about it and continue to study the Scriptures.

Ephesians 1:17-19

I keep asking that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the glorious Father, may give you the Spirit of wisdom and revelation, so that you may know him better. I pray also that the eyes of your heart may be enlightened in order that you may know the hope to which he has called you, the riches of his glorious inheritance in the saints, and his incomparably great power for us who believe.

Faith That Moves Mountains

I. The Power of God's Word



Hebrews 4:12 (KJV)

For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

There is nothing in comparison with the stately majesty that comes with God's Holy Written Word! Nothing in all the universe compares with the awesome authority, and power that God has infused within His Word. Before we can even begin to understand the operation of the principles of the law of faith, we must first come to understand the very foundation from which faith is birthed. Faith begins where the will of God is known, and God's Word is God's will. This is where faith always begins, with the Word of God!

In the first unit we will deal with the very essence of what God's Word is comprised of. It is imperative that we grasp the spiritual dynamics that have been imparted into God's Word. Until we truly appreciate the Bible for what it is, we will never begin to flow in the realm of Faith, and the kingdom of God. The Bible is the key that unlocks all the mysteries of God's kingdom principles.

The second unit shows the correlation between the Holy Spirit, and the Word. It is vital that we understand the relationship between the third person of the trinity, and the Word of God. I don't know about you, but the whole subject about the "Anointing" had been a total mystery to me. We will discover together the awesome revelation concerning God's Holy anointed Word, and its impact in the lives of believers.

The third unit is a fresh new look at the inspiration of the Scriptures. We will examine the various symbolism concerning God's Word that is interspersed throughout the Bible. The multifaceted aspects of God's Word in our lives is as brilliant as a diamond with all of its intricate dimensions. I encourage you to take your time through this section, allow the Holy Spirit to breathe life, and revelation into your spirit.

2 Timothy 3:16-17

All Scripture is God-breathed and is useful for teaching, rebuking, correcting and training in righteousness, so that the man of God may be thoroughly equipped for every good work.

A. The Word of His Grace

Acts 20:32

"Now I commit you to God and to the word of his grace, which can build you up and give you an inheritance among all those who are sanctified."

1. God's Grace

Definition of Grace- The power of God at work in us who believe; to do in and for us what we are unable to accomplish ourselves- the power and ability of God!

Greek (Charis)- The divine influence upon the heart and its reflection in the life- benefit, favor, gift.

Ephesians 3:7

I became a servant of this gospel by the gift of God's grace given me through the working of his power.

1 Corinthians 15:10

But by the grace of God I am what I am, and his grace to me was not without effect. No, I worked harder than all of them- yet not I, but the grace of God that was with me.

Colossians 1:29 (AMP)

For this I labor, striving with all the superhuman energy which He so mightily enkindles and works within me.

The Grace of God is released in our lives through our faith in God's Word. The Lord's works in our lives by His Grace, but it also requires our cooperation and faith for it to have its way in us.

Ephesians 2:8-9- For it is by grace you have been saved, through faith- and this not from yourselves, it is the gift of God- not by works, so that no one can boast.

Philippians 2:13- For it is God who works in you to will and to act according to his good purpose.

Philippians 1:6

Being confident of this, that he who began a good work in you will carry it on to completion until the day of Christ Jesus.

Grace is also God's provision for us concerning salvation, and all things that pertain to life and godliness. Every need, spirit, soul and body has been so abundantly provided for by God through the redemptive work of His Grace, that was accomplished on our behalf by Jesus Christ.

Hebrews 2:9

But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels, now crowned with glory and honor because he suffered death, so that by the grace of God he might taste death for everyone.

2 Peter 1:3-4

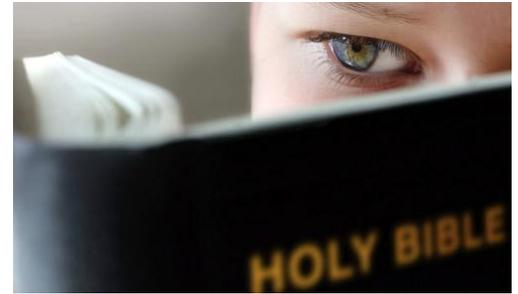
His divine power has given us everything we need for life and godliness through our knowledge of him who called us by his own glory and goodness. Through these he has given us his very great and precious promises...

I love the Scripture above, which so beautifully describes how God's power and provision for our lives is all wrapped up in His Grace. We can readily see that God's Grace is all God and none of us. Grace is a free gift that is neither earned or deserved- Romans 11:5-6. The big question I want to pose to you is, "How do we receive this grace into our lives?" "How is it appropriated, and do I have something to do with how much of His Grace I receive in my life?"

2. Received by Faith

“Now I commit you to God and to the word of his grace, which can build you up and give you an inheritance among all those who are sanctified.”

Acts 20:32



God's Grace Is Received Through Faith In God's Word!

John 6:63

The Spirit gives life; the flesh counts for nothing. The words I have spoken to you are spirit and they are life.

The Bible is a living book, the words on those pages are containers of God's grace. This grace is released in our life when we mix God's Word with our faith. Heavens resources are at our finger tips, by just flipping through the pages of God's Word.

Proverbs 4:20-22

My son, pay attention to what I say; listen closely to my words. Do not let them out of your sight, keep them within your heart; for they are life to those who find them and health to a man's whole body.

Hebrews 4:1-3

Therefore, since the promise of entering his rest still stands, let us be careful that none of you be found to have fallen short of it. For we also have had the gospel preached to us just as they did; but the message they heard was of no value to them, because those who heard **did not combine it with faith. Now we who have believed enter that rest.**

The measure of God's grace in our life can be measured by the amount of God's Word that is in our heart. Notice I said in our heart, and not in our head. We will explain this in more detail later. When we need more of God's grace in our life, we just need to get more of God's Word in our Heart!

2 Peter 1:2

Grace and peace be yours in abundance **through the knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord.**

Remember: The word of His grace does two things for us- **Builds us up** and **gives us an inheritance.** Faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the Word of God- Romans 10:17.

God's Word On Salvation = Saving Grace
God's Word On Healing = Healing Grace
God's Word On Prosperity = Prosperity Grace

Faith is the key that releases this grace in our life, to produce the substance of what we hope for.

Example: Acts 14:8-10 (Healing is part of the Atonement, and the gospel message)

As we have mentioned earlier, grace is the power of God at work in us who believe. According to 2 Peter 1:3, His divine power has given us everything we need for life and godliness **through the knowledge of God's Word.**

Romans 1:16-17

“I am not ashamed of the gospel, because it is the power of God for the salvation of everyone who believes: first for the Jew, then for the Gentile. For in the gospel a righteousness from God is revealed, a righteousness that is by faith from first to last, just as it is written: ‘The righteous will live by faith.’”

Definition Power (Greek): Force, miraculous power, ability, abundance, might, power, strength, violence, mighty wonderful work.

Definition Salvation (Vines/Greek): Deliverance, safety, health, and preservation.

**All that we Need is Found in God's Word!
Grace = POWER & PROVISION**

The message of the cross is the power of God for the salvation of the world. However, when God's Word is watered down by religious teachings that add, and take away from the gospel, the Word loses its power. Jesus made it plain, *“Woe to you experts of the law, because you have taken away the key of knowledge”* in Luke 11:52.

“For Christ did not send me to baptize, but to preach the gospel- not with words of human wisdom, lest the cross of Christ be emptied of its power. For the message of the cross is foolishness to those who are perishing, but to us who are being saved it is the power of God.”

1 Corinthians 1:17-18

“You have let go of the commands of God and are holding on to the traditions of men. You have a fine way of setting aside the commands of God in order to observe your own traditions! Thus you nullify the word of God by your traditions that you have handed down.”

Mark 7:6-13



God confirms His Word with signs and wonders! He does not confirm magazines, encyclopedias or any of man's philosophies for today. If signs and wonders are not following our message, then we had better check on what kind of a message we are preaching. God will only endorse the gospel of Jesus Christ. In addition to the Scriptures below, please look up Hebrews 2:1-4; 1Corinthians 2:1-5.

Mark 16:20

Then the disciples went out and preached everywhere, and the Lord worked with them and confirmed his word by the signs that accompanied it.

Acts 14:3

So Paul and Barnabas spent considerable time there, speaking boldly for the Lord, who confirmed the message of his grace by enabling them to do miraculous signs and wonders.

Acts 8:4-8

Those who had been scattered preached the word wherever they went. Philip went down to a city in Samaria and proclaimed the Christ there. When the crowds heard Philip and saw the miraculous signs he did, they all paid close attention to what he said. With shrieks, evil spirits came out of many, and many paralytics and cripples were healed. So there was great joy in that city.

Matthew 9:35

Jesus went through all the towns and villages, teaching in their synagogues, preaching the good news of the kingdom and healing every disease and sickness.

3. The Word of God is a Person

The Word of God is more than just a book, it is the person of Jesus Christ. Before the incarnation of Jesus, He was known in eternity past as the Word of God. That is why the Bible is more than just a book, but is the Second Person of the Godhead in written form. His very life and essence is contained in God's Word- Jesus said in John 6:63, "*The words I have spoken to you are spirit and they are life.*"

John 1:1-5

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made. In him was life, and that life was the light of men. The light shines in the darkness, but the darkness has not overcome it.

John 1:14,16-17

The Word became flesh and lived for a while among us. We have seen his glory, the glory of the one and only Son, who came from the Father, full of grace and truth. From the fullness of his grace we have all received one blessing after another. For the law was given through Moses; grace and truth came through Jesus Christ.

Revelations 19:13

He is dressed in a robe dipped in blood, and his name is the Word of God.

God created the universe through the Word of His power. All things are sustained and have their being because of the spoken Word. You will find throughout the Scriptures that God never did anything without saying it first. God is a faith God, His kingdom operates on faith principles. The source of God's power is found in the Word of His power. It is through that Word that we will receive His power in our lives to frame our world. As Christians our only power is found in speaking God's Word.

Jesus is the perfect imprint and very image of God's nature, upholding and maintaining and guiding and propelling the universe by His mighty word of power.

**Hebrews 1:3
(AMP)**



The Worlds Were Framed By The Word Of God! So Is Our Own World!

Finally, I want us to see how God's grace is imparted into our life through God's Word. When we abide in the Word, we are abiding in Jesus. As a result, we share in the nourishing sap of God's grace that sustains us in our Christian walk. *"Man does not live on bread alone, but every word that comes from the mouth of God"* Matthew 4:4.

John 15: 4,7

Remain in me, and I will remain in you. No branch can bear fruit by itself; it must remain in the vine. Neither can you bear fruit unless you remain in me. If you remain in me and my words remain in you, ask whatever you wish and it will be given you.

Romans 11:7

If some of the branches have been broken off, and you, though a wild olive shoot, have been grafted in among the others and now share in the nourishing sap from the olive root. They were broken off because of unbelief, and you stand by faith.

When we tap into the Word of His Grace through faith, we are connecting to the ultimate power source of the universe. In Luke 8:46, Jesus said, *"Someone touched me; I know that power has gone out from me."*

Unit 1 Review:

What is the definition of Grace in this lesson?

How is God's grace released in our lives?

Where do we find everything that pertains to life and godliness?

What can diminish the power in God's Word for our lives?

Why is the Bible more than just any book?

B. The Truth and The Anointing

I have had other believers ask me, “what is the anointing?” For Christians the term implies the supernatural presence of God, manifesting His power and ability, yet some are still confused, “but is the anointing a thing or a person?” We are not talking about “Star Wars” and “using the force,” as some mystical essence or an impersonal cosmic power.

1 John 2:27

As for you, the anointing you received from him remains in you, and you do not need anyone to teach you. But as his anointing teaches you about all things and as that anointing is real, not counterfeit-just as it has taught you, remain in him.

According to the above verse, this anointing we have received from Jesus will teach us about all things. Jesus talked about this very thing in the gospel of John.

John 14:16-17

And I will ask the Father, and he will give you another Counselor to be with you forever- the Spirit of truth. The world cannot accept him, because it neither sees him nor knows him. But you know him, for he lives with you and will be in you.

John 14:26

But the Counselor, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name will teach you all things and will remind you of everything I have said to you.

1 Corinthians 6:19

Do you not know that your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit, who is in you, whom you have received from God?

The Holy Spirit Is The Anointing!

Anointing (Gr) Chrisma- Endowment of the Holy Spirit. An unction. The idea of contact, to smear or rub with oil.

Vines Dictionary- To smear something on a object

Luke 24:49- “Clothed with power from on high”

Acts 1:8- “You will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes on you”

Acts 10:38- “God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and power...”

Luke 4:14 “Jesus returned to Galilee in the power of the Spirit.”

Judges 14:6 “The Spirit of the Lord came upon him in power so that he tore the lion apart...”

Remember what Jesus said in John 6:63, “*The words I have spoken to you are spirit and they are life.*” The Word of God is anointed by the Holy Spirit, smeared with His presence and full of power. “*I am not ashamed of the gospel, because it is the power of God for the salvation of everyone who believes*” according to Romans 1:16.

1. The Spirit and The Word Agree

What I mean by that statement is this, the Holy Spirit will never lead or say anything contrary to God's Word. The Holy Spirit was sent to reveal the truth of God's Word to our spirit. Without the Spirit there would be no spiritual comprehension of God, and His kingdom. He uses the Bible as His text book to train the believer in the way of righteousness and truth. Without the Spirit of God, the Word of God would have no power, the Bible would be just another religious book. What makes the Bible unique, is that it was given, is taught, and empowered by the third person of the trinity. The Spirit and the Word are one! To venture beyond the Word is to embrace deception and walk in darkness- 1 Corinthians 4:6-7. Always put the Word first, then the Spirit of God.

The Bible was penned by men, but given by inspiration of the Spirit of God.



Above all, you must understand that no prophecy of Scripture came about by the prophets own interpretation. For prophecy never had its origin in the will of man, but men spoke from God as they were carried along by the Holy Spirit.

2 Peter 1:20-21

The phrase, "Spirit of Truth" is used four times in the New Testament. Pilate asked Jesus in John 18:38, "what is truth?" That same question is being asked by millions of people today. Jesus defines what truth is John 17:17, "*Sanctify them by the truth: your word is truth.*" God's Word is truth! The Spirit's main ministry is to reveal the Word (Jesus) which is the truth- "*I am the way and the truth and the life...*" according to John 14:6.

John 15:26

When the Counselor comes, whom I will send to you from the Father, the Spirit of truth who goes out from the Father, he will testify about me.

John 16:13-14

But when the Spirit of truth, comes, he will guide you into all truth. He will not speak on his own; he will speak only what he hears, and he will tell you what is yet to come. He will bring glory to me by taking from what is mine and making it known to you.

The Holy Spirit will never speak of His own accord, but only what the Word of truth says. The Bible tells us that we can test a person or utterance to see if it is from the Spirit of God- 1 John 4:1-3; 5:6. The test is simple, if it reveals and exalts Jesus according to Scripture, it is prompted by the Holy Spirit. Consider 1 Corinthians 12:1-3, "*No one speaking by the Spirit of God will say, 'Jesus be cursed,' and no one can say, 'Jesus is Lord,' except by the Holy Spirit.*"

Another important point to make that goes right along with the Spirit and the Word agreeing is this, worship and service to God must be done by the Spirit according to the truth of God's Word. Jesus made this point quite clear to the woman of Samaria in John 4:23-24, "*Yet a time is coming and has now come when the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and truth, for they are the kind of worshippers the Father seeks. God is spirit, and his worshipers must worship in spirit and truth.*"

2. The Truth Makes Us Free

As we have read in John 17:17, God's Word is truth. It is our spiritual plumb line, and the final authority for all matters that pertain to life and conduct. When a human being embraces the truth of God's Word in their spirit, it will set them free. The Word has the power to deliver the worst sinner, drug addict or atheist on the face of the earth. Believers also need to submit themselves to the saving power of Jesus through His Word. Whatever the problem is, God has our solution in His Holy Written Word.

James 1:21, 25

Therefore, get rid of all moral filth and the evil that is so prevalent, and humbly accept the word planted in you, which can save you. But the man who looks intently into the perfect law that gives freedom, and continues to do this, not forgetting what he has heard, but doing it- he will be blessed in what he does.

John 8:31

If you hold to my teaching, you are really my disciples. Then you will know the truth, and the truth will set you free.

There are a few things I would like to point out in the above verses of Scripture. Notice in the book of James the words, "*humbly accept.*" It is absolutely vital that we approach the Bible with reverence, and respect for what it is, "The Bible is God speaking to me." Next, notice the second phrase, "*the word planted in you.*" It is not enough to have read the promise of God a few times or stand on what someone else said when they quoted a Bible verse. We must dig into the Bible like we are looking for gold. As we receive precious revelation from the Spirit, we must guard, protect, and esteem it in our heart- Proverbs 4:23. If Biblical truth is old to us, having already heard it, it was never real to us, because spiritual things never grow old.

Jesus said in John 8:31, "*If you abide in my Word-hold fast to my teachings and live in accordance with them...*" AMP. The Greek word for, "continue" means: (verb) to stay in a given place, state, relation or expectancy, to abide, dwell, endure, remain, stand, tarry for.

When we fulfill the above conditions, then we will "*know the truth*" as Jesus said. Not a head knowledge, but believing the Word of God in our heart where faith works. True, lasting freedom for our lives will come no other way. Prayer is a powerful means to bring God on the scene, but it is never designed to take the place of God's Word. It's the incorruptible seed that brings lasting life and changes in people.

2 Corinthians 3:17

Now the Lord is the Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is freedom.

Isaiah 10:27

And it shall come to pass in that day, that his burden shall be taken away from off thy shoulder, and his yoke from off thy neck, and the yoke shall be destroyed because of the anointing.

**The Burden Or Yoke Of Oppression Is Destroyed By
God's Spirit Anointed Word.**

Unit 2 Review:

What does the word “Anointing” mean?

The phrase, “The Spirit and the Word Agree” what does that mean?

Why is it important to “Always put the Word first, then the Spirit of God?”

How does the “Truth” set us free?

What did Jesus mean when He said “Knowing the Truth” will set you free?

C. The Symbols of God's Word- Part 1

Sword, Fire, Hammer, Water, Rod, Medicine

1. The Sword of the Spirit

Our primary spiritual offensive weapon is the Word of God. It is the key to winning successfully. Our objective is to get the Word of God in our heart, and out of our mouth. Waving the Bible in the air is not wielding the sword of our spirit. Only when we speak that Word out of our mouth in faith, does it become the ultimate weapon in the universe.

Ephesians 6:17

Take the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God.

2 Corinthians 10:3-5

For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, **they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.**

Revelation 19:13-15

He is dressed in a robe dipped in blood, and his name is the Word of God. The armies of heaven were following him, riding on white horses and dressed in fine linen, white and clean. **Out of his mouth comes a sharp sword with which to strike down the nations.**

Spiritual warfare is a war of words. Not guns or planes, but the clashing of words in the spiritual realm. It is through words that spiritual authority is released. Jesus gave us the keys to the kingdom that whatever we bind or loose on earth will be done in the atmosphere above us where the prince of the power of the air operates- Matthew 18:18; Ephesians 2:1-4.

Matthew 4:1-4

Then Jesus was led by the Spirit into the desert to be tempted by the devil. After fasting forty days and forty nights, he was hungry. The tempter came to him and said, "If you are the Son of God, tell these stones to become bread." Jesus answered, "It is written: 'Man does not live on bread alone, but **on every word that comes from the mouth of God.'"**

Hebrews 4:12

For the word of God is living and active. **Sharper than any double-edged sword, it penetrates even to dividing soul and spirit, joints and marrow; it judges the thoughts and attitudes of the heart.**

Spiritual Warfare Is A War Of Words!

Did you know that every person has a spiritual sword. It's that red thing in our mouth called the tongue. When words are formed in the mouth and spoken, they produce life or death, healing or injury. Whenever we hear the Words of God, they produce faith and hope, but when we hear and accept the words of the enemy, they produce fear and doubt.

Proverbs 18:21

The tongue has the power of life and death, and those who love it will eat its fruit.

Proverbs 12:18; 25:18

Reckless words pierce like a sword, but the tongue of the wise brings healing. Like a club or a sword or a sharp arrow is the man who gives false testimony against his neighbor.

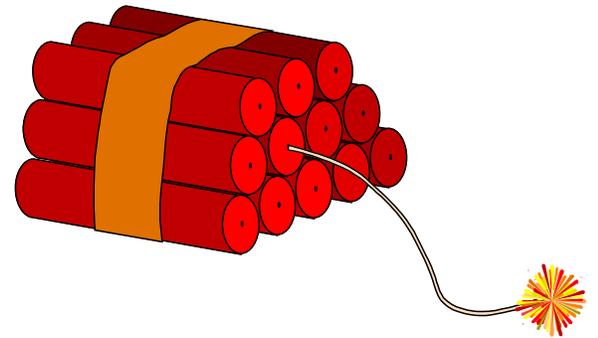
Psalms 149:6

May the praise of God be in their mouths and a double-edged sword in their hands.

Psalms 57:4; 64:3

I am in the midst of lions; I lie among ravenous beasts- men whose teeth are spears and arrows, whose tongues are sharp swords. They sharpen their tongues like swords and aim their words like deadly arrows.

God's Word Is
The Ultimate
Weapon In The
Universe!



2. God's Word is a Fire

Fire in the Bible is referred to as an act of judgment and purification. Just think of it, as the Word of God is being spoken, the fire of God consumes the enemies of God, and purges our life.

Jeremiah 23:29

“Is not my word like fire,” declares the Lord.

Jeremiah 20:9

But if I say, “I will not mention him or speak any more in his name,” his word is in my heart like a burning fire, shut up in my bones.

Hebrews 12:25-29

See to it that you do not refuse him who speaks. If they did not escape when they refused him who warned them on earth, how much less will we, if we turn away from him who warns us from heaven? At that time his voice shook the earth, but now he has promised, “Once more I will shake not only the earth but also the heavens.” The words “once more” indicate the removing of what can be shaken- that is, created things- so that what cannot be shaken may remain. Therefore, since we are receiving a kingdom that cannot be shaken, let us worship God acceptably with reverence and awe, for our God is a consuming fire.

2 Peter 3:7,10-12

By the same word the present heavens and earth are reserved for fire, being kept for the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men. But the day of the Lord will come like a thief. The heavens will disappear with a roar; the elements will be destroyed by fire, and the earth and everything in it will be laid bare. Since everything will be destroyed in this way, what kind of people ought you to be? You ought to live holy and godly lives as you look forward to the day of God and speed its coming. That day will bring about the destruction of the heavens by fire, and the elements will melt in the heat. But in keeping with his promise we are looking forward to a new heaven and a new earth, the home of righteousness.

God judges the world and us by His Word. All judgment will be carried out by what is written in the Bible. If we would judge ourselves by God's Word we would not come under judgment.



Jesus said, “As for the person who hears my words but does not keep them, I do not judge him. For I did not come to judge the world, but to save it. There is a judge for the one who rejects me and does not accept my words; that very word which I spoke will condemn him at the last day.”

John 12:47-48

For the believer, we must all stand before the judgment seat of Christ according to 2 Corinthians 5:10. We will be judged not for salvation, but faithfulness to the Word of God in our lives.

1 Corinthians 3:12-15

If any man builds on the foundation of Jesus Christ using gold, silver, costly stones, wood, hay or straw, his work will be shown for what it is, because the Day will bring it to light. It will be revealed by fire, and the fire will test the quality of each man's work. If what he has built survives, he will receive his reward. If it is burned up, he will suffer loss; he himself will be saved, but only as one escaping through the flames.

The Bible speaks of the Spirit infilling as being baptized with the Holy Spirit and fire in Matthew 3:11. I believe that the fire of the Holy Spirit is to speak the Word of God with boldness. The Holy Spirit's unction is what causes the gospel to be proclaimed with power and authority- Acts 2:41; 4:13.

Acts 4:31

After they prayed, the place where they were meeting was shaken. And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and spoke the word of God boldly.

3. God's Word is like a Hammer

When it comes to cracking some hard nuts, God's Word is more than able to do the job. According to Hebrews 3:12-13, a sober warning is given about the deceitfulness of sin, "*See to it, brothers, that none of you has a sinful, unbelieving heart that turns away from the living God. But encourage one another daily, as long as it is called Today, so that none of you maybe hardened by sin's deceitfulness.*"

When we think of a hard heart, our minds may picture the worst sinner on earth, and say, "There is someone with a hard heart." However, the above Scripture says, "See to it, brothers..." speaking of Christians having a hard heart. The practice of sin will harden anyone's heart, saint or sinner. If you or someone else has this kind of a condition, there is only one thing that can penetrate. The HAMMER of GOD'S WORD.

Jeremiah 23:29

"Is not my word like fire," declares the Lord, "and like a hammer that breaks a rock in pieces?"



Ezekiel 11:19

I will give them an undivided heart and put a new spirit in them; I will remove from them their heart of stone and give them a heart of flesh. Then they will follow my decrees and be careful to keep my laws. They will be my people, I and I will be their God.

Hebrews 8:10

"This is the covenant I will make with the house of Israel after that time, declares the Lord. I will put my laws in their minds and write them on their hearts. I will be their God, and they will be my people."

James 1:18

He chose to give us birth through the Word of truth, that we might be a kind of first fruits of all he created.

God uses His Word to break stony hearts, and bring the new birth to the sinner or new life to the saint. He also uses that hammer to chisel His character, and nature on the tablets of our heart. He inscribes the New Covenant in our spirit like He wrote the 10 commandments on the stone tablets.

2 Corinthians 3:3- "Not on tablets of stone but on tablets of human hearts."

Remember the parable of the sower that Jesus talked about in Luke 8. He said that some people have a heart that is as hard as a sidewalk. We need the holy jackhammer of God's Word to break that hard heart apart. It's better to fall on the rock, and be broken than to be crushed by it according to Matthew 21:44-
Selah!

Get Hammered With The Word!

4. The Water of God's Word

We all know by Ephesians 2:8 that salvation is obtained by grace through faith. The rules don't change once we get saved, and start living for God. It takes faith to release God's grace, in order to live for Him. The grace we need to live the victorious Christian life comes from God's Word. Grace is the power of God at work in us who believe!

Acts 20:32

Now I commit you to God and to the Word of his grace, which can build you up and give you an inheritance among all those who are sanctified.

To live the holy, sanctified (set apart) life of a disciple of Christ, it takes the power of God's Word. Not the worthless works of religion and man-made tradition. The Word of God is the key to sanctification.

Colossians 2:23

Such regulations indeed have an appearance of wisdom, with their self-imposed worship, their false humility and their harsh treatment of the body, but they lack any value in restraining sensual indulgence.

As I have been saying, the key to sanctification is God's Word. Water is a type of the Word, because it purifies, refreshes, and sustains life. If we can't go without water for very long, how much more do we need to drink from God's Holy written Word continually.

Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ loved the Church and gave himself up for her to make her holy, cleansing her by the washing with water through the word, and to present her to himself as a radiant church, without stain or wrinkle or any other blemish, but holy and blameless.

Ephesians 5:25-27



By implementing the Word of Faith principles in Romans chapter 10 concerning the Scriptures that cover sanctification, holiness will result in a transformation by grace. To put on Christ, and to clothe ourselves with the new creation as spoken of in Ephesians 4:20-24 and Colossians 3:1-14, we must put the Word in our mouth, and in our heart. Let's put the creative power of God's Word to work in our life.

Romans 12:1-2

Therefore, I urge you, brothers, in view of God's mercy, to offer your bodies as living sacrifices, holy and pleasing to God- which is your spiritual worship. Do not conform any longer to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind (with the Word of God). Then you will be able to test and approve what God's will is- his good, pleasing and perfect will.

Hebrews 10:22

Let us draw near to God with a sincere heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled to cleanse us from a guilty conscience and having our bodies washed with pure water.

5. The Rod of God's Word

God uses His Word to correct His children, not trials, tests, and temptations. Some people have the notion that God, and the devil work together to perfect the believer through crisis and tragedy. Nothing could be further from the truth! Good God, bad devil! Simple doctrine, but if we get them confused, we will find ourselves in a heap of trouble.

John 10:10

The thief comes only to steal and kill and destroy; I have come that they may have life, and have it to the full.

James 1:17

Every good and perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of the heavenly lights, who does not change like shifting shadows.

Various portions of Scripture, point out the value of trials and tests, but only if we overcome them by acting on the Word of God. We can have a mile of trials, and not grow an inch unless we are putting the Word into practice in the midst of the trial. Trials, tests and temptations are from Satan and are out to destroy our faith and us- 1 Thessalonians 3:1-5; 2 Corinthians 11:1-3; James 1:13-15.



**You Could Walk A Mile Of Tests
And Trials And Not Grow An Inch
Unless You Act On The Word Of
God In The Midst Of Those Trials.**



One final point, I personally believe that most problems in a believer's life, originate from actions, and decisions he/she makes. It's too easy to blame the devil or reason that God in His sovereignty is trying to teach us some deep spiritual truth through this sickness or accident. We could have avoided a lot of grief in our lives if we had not maxed out our credit cards, dated that unbeliever, got mad, and offended that person, on and on it goes- Galatians 6:7-8.

We are personally responsible for a lot of things. Sure the devil does come in and attacks us when we are walking in God's will; however, let's not be so quick to rationalize our problems on someone else. Especially, on God, accusing Him of being in league with the devil to teach us something. God uses His Word to teach His children. If your child disobeyed you, would you put cancer on him, make him a cripple or break his leg? NO WAY! The authorities would put you in jail for child abuse. Yet some misinformed Christians think our loving heavenly Father treats His children that way.

Yet someone might argue, but God is not like us, "His ways are higher than our ways and His thoughts higher than ours. He reserves the right to be mysterious and sovereign." For one thing that quote is from the Old Testament addressing backslidden Israel, who were spiritually dead, but for us in the New Covenant, we have the mind of Christ, Jesus calls us friends and the Holy Spirit leads us into all truth.

Jesus addressed that kind of erroneous teaching in:

Matthew 7:9-11

“Which of you, if his son asks for bread, will give him a stone? Or if he asks for a fish, will give him a snake? If you, then, though you are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give good gifts to those who ask him!”

We have just established the point that God does not initiate trials, tests and temptations to discipline or teach His children. Thank God, He can salvage, and work the good out of a situation so that it is not a total loss- that it is not God’s best. How much better to read the Bible, and heed its warnings, instructions, and admonitions and avoid tragedy all together. Remember, God uses His Word to train and discipline us, in order to produce a harvest of righteousness in our lives- Hebrews 12:4-11.

Isaiah 11:4-5

He will strike the earth with the rod of his mouth; with the breath of his lips he will slay the wicked. Righteousness will be his belt and faithfulness the sash around his waist.

Psalms 23:4

Even though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil, for you are with me: your rod and your staff, they comfort me.

2 Timothy 3:16-17

All Scripture is God-breathed and is useful for teaching, rebuking, correcting and training in righteousness, so that the man of God may be thoroughly equipped for every good work.

1 Timothy 4:8

For physical training is of some value, but godliness has value for all things, holding promise for both the present life and the life to come.

God Uses The Rod Of His Word To Train Us!

6. God’s Word is Medicine

When we get attacked in our bodies, we instinctively reach for some medicine to ingest into our body. I believe that doctors, hospitals, and medicine is a tremendous help to suffering humanity. I believe in these natural means to receive help for my physical body, but I trust in God most of all. Thank God for His healing Word, it is medicine to all our flesh!

Proverbs 4:20-23

My son, pay attention to what I say; listen closely to my words. Do not let them out of your sight, keep them within your heart; for they are life to those who find them and health to a man’s whole body. Above all else, guard your heart, for it is the wellspring of life.

According to the Bible, God's Word is health to a person's whole body! Let's look at the Hebrew word for, "Health":

Curative, a medicine, a cure, deliverance, healing, remedy, sound, wholesome.

Therefore, we can say that the Bible is God's medicine. It is life to those who find them, and we eat them through meditation- speaking the Word.



God's Word is a living, powerful force that will consume any form of death that may be at work in our body. Sickness and disease is just a form of death; if left unchecked it can lead to physical death. Jesus conquered death through His redemptive work 2000 years ago- Hebrews 2:14-15; 1 John 3:8; 1 Corinthians 15:50-57. Jesus is the Word of God made flesh according to the Gospel of John chapter 1. When we receive and abide in God's Word, we are abiding in the resurrected Jesus, full of life and God's power- John 15:7.

Psalm 107:20

He sent forth his word and healed them; he rescued them from the grave.

Exodus 15:26

The Lord said, "If you listen carefully to the voice of the Lord your God and do what is right in his eyes, if you pay attention to his commands and keep all his decrees, I will not bring (permit) on you any of the diseases I brought on the Egyptians, **for I am the Lord who heals you.**"

The three Scriptures above that have the word health, healed, and heals refer to the Hebrew redemptive name of God, Jehovah Rapha- the Lord that heals you. God's primary way of healing is through faith in God's Word. God's Word contains the power to heal our hurting body.

The Hebrew word **RAPHA-** To mend (by stitching) to cure, heal physician, repair, thoroughly make whole.

John 6:63

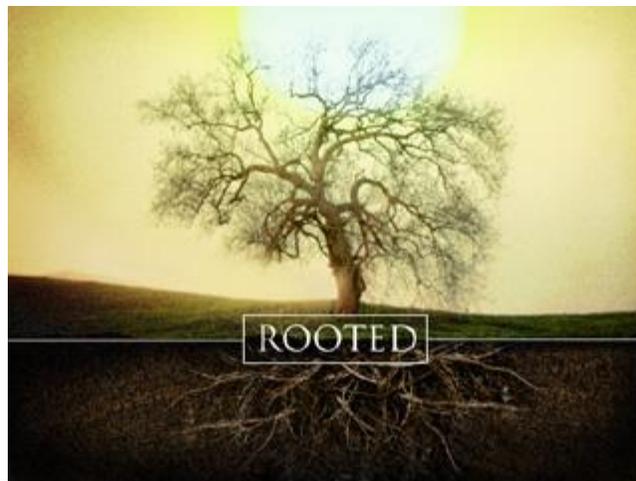
The Spirit gives life; the flesh counts for nothing. The words I have spoken to you are spirit and they are life.

Matthew 8:14-17

When Jesus came into Peter's house, he saw Peter's mother-in-law lying in bed with a fever. He touched her hand and the fever left her, and she got up and began to wait on him. When evening came, many who were demon-possessed were brought to him, and he **drove out the spirits with a word and healed all the sick.** This was to fulfill what was spoken through the prophet Isaiah; "He took up our infirmities and carried our diseases."

God's Word Contains The Power To Heal Our Hurting Body!

You may be asking yourself, "Well how do I take my medicine?" When you go to the great physician (Jesus) for healing, He will prescribe for you to ingest His Word on healing, day and night until your healing manifests. He will also tell you to continue in His Word, in order to keep the condition from ever coming back on you. As you meditate (mutter/speak) His healing Scriptures, they will eventually get into your spirit, where faith will grow and releases the healing power of Jesus into your body.



Blessed is the man who does not walk in the counsel of the wicked or stand in the way of sinners or sit in the seat of mockers. But his delight is in the law of the Lord, and on his law he meditates day and night. He is like a tree planted by streams of water, which yields its fruit in season and whose leaf does not wither. Whatever he does prospers.

Psalm 1:1-3

Do not let this Book of the Law depart from your mouth; meditate on it day and night, so that you may be careful to do everything written in it. Then you will be prosperous and successful.

Joshua 1:8

So then, just as you received Christ Jesus as Lord, continue to live in him, rooted and built up in him, strengthened in the faith as you were taught, and overflowing with thankfulness.

Colossians 2:6-7

Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly as you teach and admonish one another with all wisdom, and as you sing psalms, hymns and spiritual songs with gratitude in your hearts to God.

Colossians 3:16-17

Unit 3 Review:

What is our spiritual sword and how is it wielded?

An important symbolism of God’s Word is “Fire” what does that mean?

God’s Word is referred to as a “Hammer” how is it used in this fashion?

Why is God’s Word the key to our sanctification in our lives?

What is meant by God’s Word as a “Rod” and how do Christians get confused on this matter?

How does one take God’s medicine for his/her body?

D. The Symbols of God's Word- Part 2

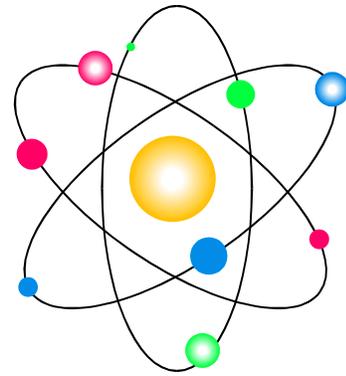
Seed, Bread, Light, Mirror, Rock

1. God's Word is Incorruptible Seed

We have been saying all along that the Bible is no ordinary book to the believer. Unlike a magazine, newspaper or history book, the Bible is a living force of God- spirit and life. The Bible requires one ingredient that will release the power of God in our life. Without this vital element, the Bible would appear to be just another religious book- dead and lifeless. That key component is FAITH! Faith is the key that unlocks God's power that is stored in His Word. It releases the treasures of God's wisdom, and ability to move any mountain, meet any need, and defeat any demon. Until faith is introduced, and mixed with the Word of God, it remains dormant, but pulsating with power. When the believer applies these principles of the law of faith to the Bible, heaven comes to earth!

**For the word of God is living and active.
Sharper than any double-edged sword, it
penetrates even to dividing soul and spirit,
joints and marrow; it judges the thoughts
and attitudes of the heart.**

Hebrews 4:12



Acts 7:38

Moses was in the assembly in the desert, with our fathers and with the angel who spoke to him on Mount Sinai; and he received living words to pass on to us.

For The Word Of God Is Living And Active!

Just as the potential for life is within a natural seed, so the Word of God is waiting to germinate, and produce life in the heart of the believer. Certain conditions in the natural must be met before a seed will grow, and develop to its full potential- soil, water, and sunshine. So it is with God's incorruptible seed- faith, the spirit of man, and God's Grace.

1 Corinthians 3:5-6

What, after all, is Apollos? And what is Paul? Only servants, through whom you came to believe- as the Lord has assigned to each his task. I planted the seed, Apollos watered it, but God made it grow.

The seed is the Word of God. The seed is planted through the preaching of the Word- Romans 10:14-17; 15:15-20. The seed is watered through the teaching of God's Word- Acts 18:24-28; 11:19-26. It is only by God's grace and the Holy Spirit that makes that seed grow and produce the fruits of eternal life in the life of the believer.

I had just mentioned on the previous page that the seed is the Word of God. Let us look at the explanation of the parable of the sower that Jesus gave us in order to illustrate this powerful truth.

Luke 8:11-15

“This is the meaning of the parable: The seed is the Word of God. Those along the path are the ones who hear, and then the devil comes and takes away the word from their hearts, so that they cannot believe and be saved. Those on the rock are the ones who receive the Word with joy when they hear it, but they have no root. They believe for a while, but in the time of testing they fall away. The seed that fell among thorns stands for those who hear, but as they go on their way they are choked by life's worries, riches and pleasures, and they do not mature. But the seed on good soil stands for those with a noble and good heart, who hear the word, retain it, and by perseverance produce a crop.”

The seed of God's Word is sown into the human heart whenever it is heard. As we have just read, the condition of a person's heart will determine if that seed will grow, and produce a harvest. What I want us to appreciate is the fact that the seed has the power within itself to bring about its own fulfillment, and produce after its own kind. As long as the conditions of faith are operating in a good, and noble heart are present, God's grace will bring the increase and harvest in time.



Let the Word do the work! Jesus said His yoke would be easy and His burden light. However, without faith in God's Word that would be impossible. So often we rely on our own natural resources, and efforts to get the job done. Natural skill and resources are limited, but all things are possible to them who believe. The Father wants His children to enter into rest by sowing His Word in our lives, and allowing our faith to bring substance to the things we hope for.

Hebrews 4:1-3

Therefore, since the promise of entering his rest still stands, let us be careful that none of you be found to have fallen short of it. For we also have had the gospel preached to us, just as they did; but the message they heard was of no value to them, because those who heard **did not combine it with faith. Now we who have believed enter that rest.**

There you have it, God has made provision for His children to enter into rest and into His provision. In 2 Peter 1:2-4, God has given us His exceedingly great and precious promises. How are they appropriated into our lives? That question will be covered extensively later on in this book.

Finally, I would like to illustrate two spiritual laws found in Genesis that will summarize the eternal truth of the incorruptible seed of God's Word. The first law is this, "*Everything produces after its own kind.*" There is a natural side as well as a spiritual side to this law that God set in motion in Genesis chapter one. The seed of every living thing is within itself to reproduce itself. Trees reproduce trees of the same species. A bird and a fish cannot reproduce together. Jesus said that in a spiritual context, the seed is the Word of God.

Genesis 1:11-12,29

Then God said, "Let the land produce vegetation: seed-bearing plants and trees on the land that bear fruit with seed in it, according to their various kinds." And it was so. The land produced vegetation; plants bearing seed according to their kinds and trees bearing fruit with seed in it according to their kinds. And God saw that it was good. Then God said to man, "I give you every seed-bearing plant on the face of the whole earth and every tree that has fruit with seed in it."

John 12:24

"I tell you the truth, unless a kernel of wheat falls to the ground and dies, it remains only a single seed. But if it dies, it produces many seeds."

If we wanted to plant a garden, and in that garden we wanted to plant some wheat. What would we need in order to plant wheat? Wheat seed of course! We can't take rice seeds, plant them and expect to receive a harvest of wheat. The Bible contains all the seed of God's promises and provision for our life. However, to meet a specific need, we need to find the specific seed to meet that need. If our body is in need of physical healing, we must find healing Scriptures, and plant them in our heart through faith principles. That healing seed will grow in our heart and materialize in time. If we need more of God's peace in our life, let's not focus our time and energy on planting sanctification seed. It's the same as planting rice seed and expecting wheat to appear. Sow the type of seed to meet the specific need, we have got to plant before we receive. Note, not walking in love and holiness can short circuit our faith. I am making the assumption that we are walking in the light of God's Word concerning those areas.



As the rain and the snow come down from heaven, and do not return to it without watering the earth, and making it bud and flourish, so that it yields seed for the sower and bread for the eater, so is my word that goes out from my mouth: It will not return to me void or empty, but will accomplish what I desire and achieve the purpose for which I sent it.

Isaiah 55:10-11

The second law of Genesis is that, “*As long as the earth endures, there will be seed time and harvest.*” Notice the Scriptures do not say, “Harvest then seed time.” Before every harvest, there is always a season of planting. This principle is true in the spiritual as it is in the natural. To reap a spiritual harvest, spiritual seed must first be planted. The seed is the Word of God. Sow the Word in your heart through faith and reap a harvest of God’s provision in your life.

Genesis 8:20-22

Then Noah built an alter to the Lord and, taking some of all the clean animals and clean birds, he sacrificed burnt offerings on it. The Lord smelled the pleasing aroma and said in his heart:” Never again will I curse the ground because of man, even though every inclination of his heart is evil from childhood. And never again will I destroy all living creatures, as I have done. As long as the earth endures, seed time and harvest, cold and heat, summer and winter, day and night will never cease.”

The spiritual law of sowing and reaping not only refers to speaking the Word of God, but also to our own actions as well. Every act has a corresponding consequence- good or bad.

Galatians 6:7-10

Do not be deceived: God cannot be mocked. A man reaps what he sows. The one who sows to please his sinful nature, from that nature will reap destruction; the one who sows to please the Spirit, from the Spirit will reap eternal life. Let us not become weary in doing good **for at the proper time we will reap a harvest if we do not give up. Therefore, as we have opportunity, let us do good to all people, especially to those who belong to the family of believers.**

Matthew 26:51-52

One of Jesus’ companions reached for his sword, drew it out and struck the servant of the high priest, cutting off his ear. “Put your sword back in its place,” Jesus said to him, “for all who draw the sword will die by the sword.**”**

Before any Christian received salvation through faith in Jesus Christ, the seed of God’s Word was first sown in their hearts. Someone preached the Word on salvation to them according to Romans 10:14-15. Remember, we cannot reap a spiritual or natural harvest until we first sow the seed specific to the need.

Jesus said, “This is what the kingdom of God is like. A man scatters seed on the ground. Night and day, whether he sleeps or gets up, the seed sprouts and grows, though he does not know how. All by itself the soil produces grain- first the stalk, then the head, then the full kernel in the head. As soon as the grain is ripe, he puts the sickle to it, because the harvest has come.”

Mark 4:26-29



God's Word is incorruptible. That means it can never change, be altered or perverted in any way. I would encourage you to read all of Psalms 119. The whole chapter is devoted to glorifying God for His eternal Word. Our first experience with this life giving seed was in the new birth of our human spirit. We had mentioned earlier that the salvation experience is precipitated by the planting of God's Word in our heart. It is that same Word on salvation that produces the fruit of eternal life in our spirit by the Holy Spirit.

James 1:18

He Chose to give us birth through the word of truth, that we might be a kind of first fruits of all he created.

1 Peter 1:23-24

For you have been born again, not of perishable seed, but of imperishable, through the living and enduring word of God. For, "All men are like grass, and all their glory is like the flowers of the field; the grass withers and the flowers fall, but the word of the Lord stands forever."

Mark 13:31

Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will never pass away.

Psalms 119:89, 152, 160

Your word, O Lord, is eternal; it stands firm in the heavens. Long ago I learned from your statutes that you established them to last forever. All your words are true; all your righteous laws are eternal.

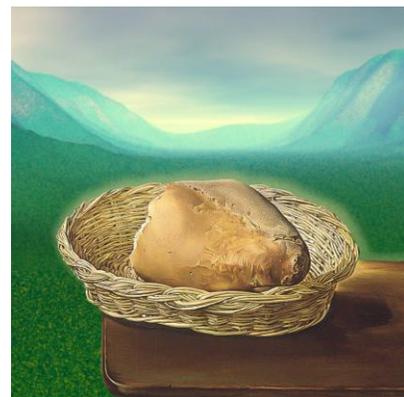
God's Word Can't Fail - We Just Fail To Work It!

2. The Bread of Life

As natural food is to our body, so the Word of God is to our spirit. A minister once said, "People wonder why they don't have any faith to receive from God. They feed their body three hot meals a day, but their spirit one cold snack a week." God's Word is our primary source of spiritual nourishment. The Word of God is our bread of life.

**Jesus answered, "It is written:
'Man does not live on bread alone,
but on every word that comes from
the mouth of God.'"**

Matthew 4:4



Natural food contains energy called calories. When we study the food cycle, all our food sources come from the sun's energy. That awesome power is converted into biological matter that sustains life on this earth. We have read in Hebrews 4:12, "For the Word of God is living and active." In 2 Timothy 3:16, "All Scripture is God-breathed..." The Son of God shines His light and breathes His Spirit into the Word of His grace, and it's alive and full of life. It releases spiritual calories that are converted into spiritual energy for us to, "live, move and have our being" according to Acts 17:28.

Job 23:12

I have not departed from the commands of his lips; I have treasured the words of his mouth more than my daily bread.

Jeremiah 15:16

When your words came, I ate them; they were my joy and my heart's delight, for I bear your name, O Lord God Almighty.

Food is the substance that gives life and energy and speaks of sustaining power. God's Word produces the same affects for our spiritual life which encompasses our whole being and destiny. Notice by these Scriptures that it involves an act of our free will to open our mouth and eat, but it's easy when we are eating the honey of God's Word- our joy and our heart's delight.

Ezekiel 2:8; 3:1-3

You must speak my words to them, whether they listen or fail to listen, for they are rebellious. But you, son of man, listen to what I say to you. Do not rebel like that rebellious house; open your mouth and eat what I give you." And he said to me, "Son of man, eat what is before you, eat this scroll; then go and speak to the house of Israel." So I opened my mouth, and he gave me the scroll to eat, and it tasted as sweet as honey in my mouth.

Psalm 119:103

How sweet are your promises to my taste, sweeter than honey to my mouth!

Psalm 19:9-11

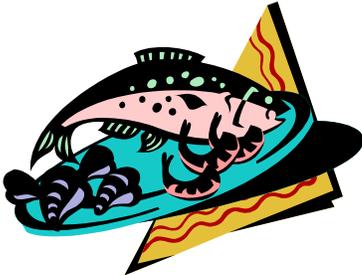
The ordinances of the Lord are sure and altogether righteous. They are more precious than gold, than much pure gold; they are sweeter than honey, than honey from the comb. By them is your servant warned; in keeping them there is great reward.

Do not worry about becoming over weight with God's Word. It does not have the same negative affects as obesity does in the natural. As a matter of fact, the Scriptures admonish us to be full of God's Word. Physically we cannot live on a few snacks a week. We cannot afford it spiritually either. To be equipped and nourished spiritually is more important than it is for our physical bodies, because to be spiritually sound has eternal implications. A spirit depleted of God's Word is a weak, feeble, and frail spirit; unable to deal with life's issues that confront us.

Let The Word Of Christ Dwell In You Richly!

Let us approach the banquet table of God's Word with a hearty appetite and eat our fill of his salvation!

The Bible is our source of spiritual food and nourishment for the new babe in Christ and the mature believer. There is always something good to eat in heaven's kitchen.



We feed our spirit by meditating upon the Word of God. In our western world we are the fastest readers on the earth. Like the rest of our culture, everything is fast- quantity without a whole lot of quality. Bible meditation is not to be confused with false eastern religions; rather it speaks of a slow savoring process that submerges oneself in the Bible to extract spiritual truth by the Holy Spirit. Simply put, to meditate on the Bible is to speak it out of our mouth so we can hear it- Romans 10:7-8,17

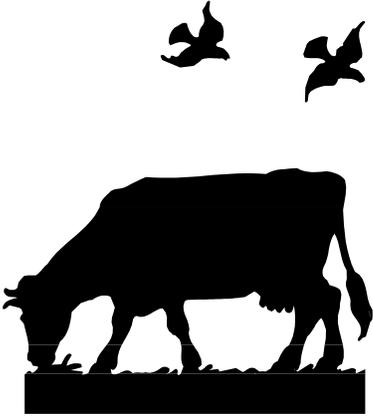
Remember how Mom would tell us at the dinner table, "Now you need to chew each mouth full 20 to 30 times before you swallow." The wisdom in these words kept us from having an upset stomach. The Bible needs to be approached the same way; give yourself lots of time and do not get in a hurry. Do not set some quota for yourself- 10 pages in 10 minutes. Allow yourself time to take each verse at a time and chew on it in order to extract all the wonderful revelation before you move onto the next bite.

"Meditate" in the Hebrew means- To mumber or mutter, to ponder, imagine, speak, study, talk and utter.

We need to eat the Bible like a cow eats grass:

**Graze in the pastures of God's Word.
Chew it in your mouth and heart for a long time.
Bring it back up later on and chew on it some more.**

Be prayerful as you read the Bible; Ask the Holy Spirit for understanding and revelation. Reflect, resonate, savor, relish, mutter and speak God's Word- take it from Betsy!



Joshua 1:7-8
Be strong and courageous. Be careful to obey all the law my servant Moses gave you; do not turn from it to the right or to the left, that you may be successful wherever you go. Do not let this Book of the Law depart from your mouth; meditate on it day and night, so that you may be careful to do everything written in it. Then you will be prosperous and successful.

**Bible Meditation + Careful Application =
Prosperity and Success!**

3. God's Word is Spiritual Light

Just as natural light reveals this natural world, so the Word of God reveals the Kingdom of God to us. We can walk with God and not stumble around in ignorance. The measure of God's Word that we are walking in and living in from day to day, is the measure of spiritual light we are currently walking in. Without the Bible, God is extremely limited in revealing Himself and His Kingdom to us. God's Word enables us to see clearly as things really are, not as they appear to be to our physical senses.

Psalm 119:130 AMP

The entrance and unfolding of your words gives light; it gives understanding- discernment and comprehension- to the simple.

- Hebrew word for (**Entrance**)= Disclosure, opening, open wide, appear, break forth, draw out.
- Hebrew word for (**Light**)= Illumination, lightning, bright, clear, day light, morning sun.
- Hebrew word for (**Understanding**)= Distinguish, consider, discern, inform, instruct, have intelligence, knowledge, perceive, be prudent, skillful, regard, teach, think, view deal wisely.

God's Word imparts knowledge, and understanding concerning God, ourselves and the world we live in. Revelation is the unveiling of truth that enriches our lives to know the Lord and walk in His ways.

There is no other source of written material that has divine inspiration like the Bible. It is our source for all truth as Jesus said in John 17:17, "Sanctify them by the truth; your word is truth." The Bible does not just have truth, IT IS THE TRUTH- Through & Through!



Let The Word Turn The Lights On In Your Life!

Luke 2:28-32

Simeon took him in his arms and praised God, saying: "Sovereign Lord, as you have promised, now dismiss your servant in peace. For my eyes have seen your salvation, which you have prepared in the sight of all people, a light for revelation to the gentiles and for glory to your people Israel."

God's light shines through His Word and drives the darkness of ignorance, confusion and hopelessness out of our lives. This light produces life (Salvation) and freedom that translates us from the authority of darkness into the kingdom of light of God's dear Son- Colossians 1:12-14. *"The entrance of your words gives light..."* according to Psalm 119:130. Knowledge of God through His Word produces **LIGHT!** What a wonderful treasure to have. Storing up the knowledge of God in our hearts, that we may be conformed into the image of Jesus Christ- Colossians 3:1-10.

2 Corinthians 4:6-7

For God, who said, "Let light shine out of darkness," made his light shine in our hearts to give us the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Christ. But we have this treasure in jars of clay to show that this all surpassing power is from God and not from us.

Colossians 2:2-3

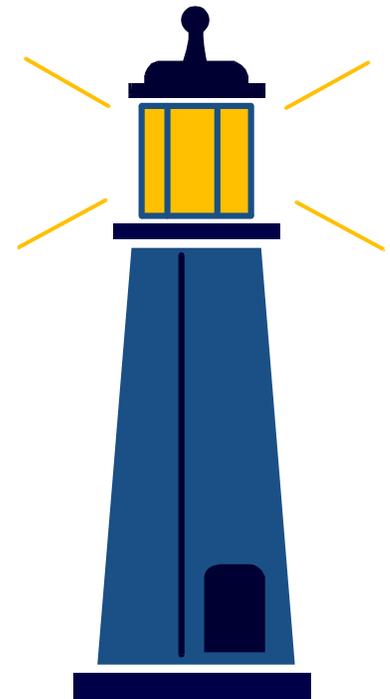
My purpose is that they may be encouraged in heart and united in love, so that they may have the full riches of complete understanding, in order that they may know the mystery of God, namely Christ, in whom are hidden all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

**"Your word is a lamp to my feet and a light for my path."
Psalm 119:105**

"Send forth your light and your truth, let them guide me; let them bring me to your holy mountain, to the place where you dwell." Psalm 43:3

The Word of God is a light that guides our life along the path of eternal life. It is our only source, and final authority for all matters that pertain to life and conduct. The Bible will always lead us into the presence of God to receive salvation, and all things that pertain to life and godliness.

"Enter through the narrow gate. For wide is the gate and broad is the road that leads to destruction, and many enter through it. But small the gate and narrow the road that leads to life, and only a few find it." Matthew 7:13-14



One step out of God's Word is one step into the darkness of error and deception. Stay with the Word, and do not embrace the philosophies of men and the lies of this world. The Bible is our only source to lead us to God, and to understand His Kingdom. All we need to know about spiritual revelation is found in the Bible. When people start seeking revelations that are beyond the Word, they are in dangerous waters. Satan is known to appear as an angel of light to distort Scripture and provide counterfeit revelation to deceive people from knowing the truth-2 Peter 2:1-3; 1 Timothy 4:1-5; 1 Corinthians 4:6-7.

Get Full Of God's Light By Getting Full Of God's Word!

The Word of God is our treasure chest which reveals the mystery of Jesus Christ in whom are hidden all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge- Colossians 2:3. Consider the Bible as the gold mine of God, full of precious gold and rare jewels. Through prayerful study and meditation in the Scriptures, the Holy Spirit will lead us to the treasure and write them upon the tablets of our heart. Our lives will be enriched and we will prosper and be in health even as our soul prospers with the Word of God- 3 John 2. God has no greater joy then to see His children walking in the truth of His Word and enjoy His good and perfect gifts 3 John 4.

2 Timothy 2:15

Study to show yourself approved unto God, a workman who does not need to be ashamed and who correctly handles the word of truth.

2 Corinthians 3:3

You show that you are a letter from Christ, the result of our ministry, written not with ink but with the Spirit of the living God, not on tablets of stone but on tablets of human hearts.

Enlightened By God's Word: The Word of God imparts wisdom, giving light- Spiritual illumination and understanding to the eyes of our heart. God's Word makes wise the simple. The Bible is full of light, giving light to the eyes, revealing truth and bringing forth understanding.

Psalm 19:7-8

The law of the Lord is perfect, reviving the soul. The statutes of the Lord are trustworthy, making wise the simple. The precepts of the Lord are right, giving joy to the heart. The commands of the Lord are radiant, giving light to (enlightening) the eyes.

Ephesians 1:17-19

I keep asking that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of Glory, that He may grant you a spirit of wisdom and revelation- of insight into mysteries and secrets- in the [deep and intimate] knowledge of Him. By having the eyes of your heart flooded with light, so that you can know and understand the hope to which he has called you and how rich is his inheritance in the saints- His set-apart ones. And [so that you can know and understand] what is the immeasurable and unlimited and surpassing greatness of his power in and for us who believe, as demonstrated in the working of his mighty strength, which he exerted in Christ when he raised him from the dead and seated him at his [own] right hand in the heavenly places.



4. A Spiritual Mirror

Mirrors in the natural are used by us every day. They give us an accurate reflection of what we look like. We have learned to trust them in that they portray a proper reflection of how we look from a natural standpoint. We have learned to appreciate and sometimes disgust the blatant honesty of a mirror. It reveals our good days and our bad days without any prejudice or bias. God's Word is a spiritual mirror that reflects a spiritual image unseen to the natural eyes. This true image of who we are in Christ Jesus can only be seen through the eyes of God's Word. This is the way God sees us and reveals our true standing and position before Him through Jesus.

James 1:22-25

Do not merely listen to the word, and so deceive yourselves. Do what it says. Anyone who listens to the word but does not do what it says is like a man who looks at his face in a mirror and, after looking at himself, goes away and immediately forgets what he looks like. But the man who looks intently into the perfect law that gives freedom, and continues to do this, not forgetting what he has heard, but doing it- he will be blessed in what he does.

An important principle to point out above, is that hearing the Word without putting it into practice will not do us any good. Here are a couple of ways we can put God's Word into practice in our life. First, by meditating on the promises of what God has given us through the redemption of Jesus. Second, obey any instructions concerning lifestyle, behavior and attitudes. The latter is also accomplished through meditating on those very instructions. Then we will be blessed in all that we do.

Luke 11:28

Jesus replied, "Blessed rather are those who hear the word of God and obey it."

2 Corinthians 1:20

For no matter how many promises God has made, they are "Yes" in Christ. And so through him the "Amen" is spoken by us to the glory of God.

There are some 30,000 plus promises in the Bible and the above Holy Spirit inspired Scripture says that they are "**Yes**" for us today in Christ Jesus- "*... in whom are hidden all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge*" in Colossians 2:3. "*For in him we live and move and have our being*" in Acts 17:28. In Jesus Christ we have all things, can do all things and are all things in Him, "*So then, no more boasting about men! All things are yours, whether Paul or Apollos or Cephas or the world or life or death or the present or the future- all are yours, and you are of Christ, and Christ is of God*" 1 Corinthians 3:21-22.

2 Peter 1: 1-4

Simon Peter, a servant and apostle of Jesus Christ, To those who through the righteousness of our God and Savior Jesus Christ have received a faith as precious as ours: Grace and peace be yours in abundance through the knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord. His divine power has given us everything we need for life and godliness through our knowledge of him who called us by his own glory and goodness. Through these he has given us his very great and precious promises, so that through them you may participate in the divine nature and escape the corruption in the world caused by evil desires.

James 1:17

Every good and perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of the heavenly lights, who does not change like shifting shadows.

Matthew 7:11

“If you, then, though you are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give good gifts to those who ask him!”

Romans 8:31-32

If God is for us, who can be against us? He who did not spare his own Son, but gave him up for us all- how will he not also, along with him, graciously give us all things?

1 Timothy 6:17

Put your hope in God, who richly provides us with everything for our enjoyment.

Unfortunately, with the help of religious tradition, and a backwards society, many Christians end up having a distorted image of God and themselves- like looking at those distorted mirrors in a fun house, all twisted and out of proportion. Their minds are full of all kinds of goofed up and twisted thinking. But thank God if we let the Word of Christ dwell in us richly (Colossians 3:16), we can renew our minds (Romans 12:2) into the mind of Christ- 1Corinthians 2:16. This will result in a transformed life that will think right, and believe right; resulting in us receiving the right things according to God's will.

2 Corinthians 5:16

So from now on we regard no one from a worldly point of view. Though we once regarded Christ in this way, we do so no longer. Therefore, if anyone is in Christ, he is a **new creation; the old has gone, the new has come!**

I would like to encourage you to start looking at yourself, and others by their new spiritual nature and through the eyes of God's Word. Believe me, things will become much more focused and clear. Don't stop there, go beyond just looking into God's Word. Put God's precious promises in your mouth and in your heart; start receiving God's provision of grace for every area of life. Life does not have to be the same, you can change and your circumstances can change as you learn to mix His Word with faith- Hebrews 4:1-3. Begin acting on and confessing God's Word, and in time your life will begin to be re-arranged.

**Begin Looking Through The Eyes Of God's
Word!**

5. God's Word is a Solid Rock on which to Stand

All decisions and behavior are based on some kind of belief system. The type of social, religious or philosophical training becomes the cornerstones by which our lives are built. Unless our cornerstone is Jesus, life will be off base. I have been saying that God's Word is our final authority for all matters that pertain to life and conduct. The Bible is the rock on which we build our lives.

2 Timothy 3:14-16

But as for you, continue in what you have learned and have become convinced of, because you know those from whom you learned it, and how from infancy you have known the Holy Scriptures, which are able to make you wise for salvation through faith in Christ Jesus. All Scripture is God-breathed and is useful for teaching, rebuking, correcting and training in righteousness, so that the man of God may be thoroughly equipped for every good work.

Psalm 119:89, 152, 160

Your word, O Lord, is eternal; it stands firm in the heavens. Long ago I learned from your statutes that you established them to last forever. All your words are true; all your righteous laws are eternal. Great peace have they who love your word, and nothing can make them stumble.

Mark 13:31

Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will never pass away.

In the natural, the ideal foundation on which to build any structure is upon solid rock. The engineers will direct the construction crew to drill pylons deep into the ground until they can be anchored into sheer bedrock. This solid foundation stabilizes the structure against storms and earth quakes. When the believer, learns to practice the Word in every area of life, he/she is building their house upon a rock. Regardless of the prevailing winds of false doctrine and crisis, God's Word sustains us and supplies the grace we need in order to overcome.

“Therefore everyone who hears these words of mine and puts them into practice is like a wise man who built his house on the rock. The rain came down, the streams rose, and the winds blew and beat against that house; yet it did not fall, because it had its foundation on the rock. But everyone who hears these words of mine and does not put them into practice is like a foolish man who built his house on sand. The rain came down, the streams rose, and the winds blew and beat against that house, and it fell with a great crash.”

Matthew 7:24-27



Luke 11:28

Jesus replied, “Blessed rather are those who hear the Word of God and obey it.”

James 1:25

But the man who looks intently into the perfect law that gives freedom, and continues to do this, not forgetting what he has heard, but doing it- he will be blessed in what he does.

Human nature likes to procrastinate when it comes to Bible reading and meditation. However, it is often too late to build our faith in the midst of a storm. How much better to establish a lifestyle of building our lives upon a rock from the very beginning. It’s no fun when our life crashes around us due to negligence or a lack of preparation. There is a higher realm of victory in God to live in; rather than surviving in crisis mode- scrambling for answers and uttering desperate pleas for help all of the time.

Matthew 26:40-41

Then he returned to his disciples and found them sleeping. “Could you not keep watch with me for one hour?” he asked Peter. “Watch and pray so that you will not fall into temptation. The spirit is willing, but the body is weak.”

1 Corinthians 16:13

Be on your guard; stand firm in the faith; be men of courage; be strong. Do everything in love.

1 Peter 1:13; 4:7

Therefore, prepare your minds for action; be self-controlled; set your hope fully on the grace to be given you when Jesus Christ is revealed. The end of all things is near. Therefore be clear minded and self-controlled so that you can pray.

Psalm 119:9

How can a young man keep his way pure? By living according to your word.

Be A Doer Of The Word And Not A Hearer Only!

Unit 4 Review:

Identify one of the two laws of Genesis and how does it pertain to God's Word?

Identify the other law of Genesis and how does it pertain to God's Word?

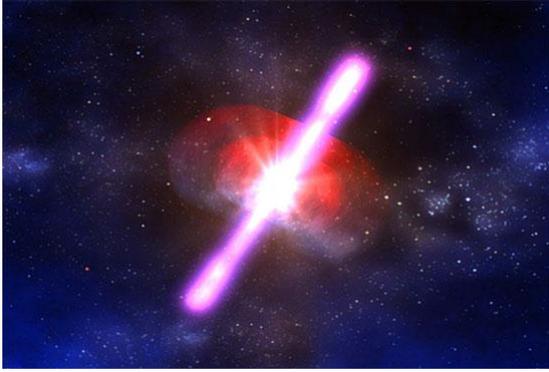
How do we feed our spirit, and with what?

What is meant by God's Word being spiritual light?

What is it about God's Word that makes it a spiritual mirror?

How does God's Word act as a solid foundation for our lives?

II. The Creative Force of the Tongue



Hebrews 1:3 AMP

Jesus is the sole expression of the glory of God [the Light-being, the out-raying or radiance of the divine], and He is the perfect imprint and very image of [God's] nature, upholding and maintaining and guiding and propelling the universe by His mighty word of power.

In John 6:63, Jesus said, *“The words I have spoken unto you are spirit and they are life.”* God’s Word that is conceived in your heart, then formed by the tongue, and spoken out of your own mouth, becomes a spiritual force releasing the ability of God within you. When God’s creative Word is spoken from your heart in faith- all things are possible to those who believe!

Our heavenly Father wants us to learn to imitate Him and release faith in every word we speak. Words are containers, they transmit substance- life or death- it matters what we say! The kingdom of God works on a Word-Faith principle; the Word of God works when we work it. Words are the building blocks of the universe, they initiate God’s activities in the earth, and are what frames our own world that we live each day. Mountains in our lives are moved through speaking faith filled words!

In this section, we will explore the wonderful world of words. Words appear to be common place in this society we live in, but they are greatly under estimated. Through biblical text, we will see the proper use, and place words have in our lives. It is through words that our personal worlds are formed. Words, break us or make us, save us or destroy us. Christianity is known as the great confession.

Now we will see the reality of our place in God’s creation. Until we grasp this reality, how can we ever hope to function in that position. Through the great redemption that Jesus acquired for us, we have been restored back into relationship with the glorious Godhead. The Bible teaches us how to operate in this realm of speaking God’s Word. This may be new to you, but God has been doing it from all eternity. Now the Father God is extending an invitation to us, His children, to join with him in this creative act of speaking His Word in order to create His will in our lives.

Soon we will discover the impact words have upon our lives. I believe that many tragedies can be avoided if we would just learn to bridle our tongue. The concepts shared in this chapter may require a paradigm shift for you. I would like to encourage you to open your heart, and examine the Scriptures for yourself. I truly believe that your appreciation, and understanding will grow in what our words can do for us, and what our words can do against us.

Finally, we will discuss some of God’s spiritual laws that govern the universe, and our lives as well. It is so critical that we understand their operation and practice, in order to prevent us from misusing them to our detriment. It will soon shock you, how we as Christians are so careless with Biblical principles. When we go shooting our mouths off, we are setting spiritual laws into motion that will shape our future. I believe when you have finished reading this lesson, you will gain a greater respect for what your mouth is capable of doing. So let’s now jump into our study of the wonderful world of words!

A. Man was Created in God's Class

Man is a spirit being, created in the image of God. This principle is absolutely essential to understanding faith, and its biblical operations in our lives. God made mankind in His class, not that we are God, but we are His offspring as stated in Acts 17:28. Since faith operates out of the heart of God's people, our introduction to faith begins here, understanding the human spirit.

Genesis 1:26-28

Then God said, "**Let us make man in our image, in our likeness, and let them rule over** the fish of the sea and the birds of the air, over the livestock, over all the earth, and over all the creatures that move along the ground." So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him; male and female he created them. God blessed them and said to them, "Be fruitful and increase in number; **fill the earth and subdue it. Rule over the fish** of the sea and the birds of the air and over every living creature that moves on the ground."

1. God gave Man Dominion over the Earth



How was man to subdue the earth, and exercise this God given dominion? Primarily through the use of words. Notice in Genesis 2:19-20, whatever name man gave the animals, that was their name.

Unfortunately in Genesis 3:1-7 Adam and Eve obeyed the words of the devil, and transferred that God given authority to him- Luke 4:5-6. Man was the god of this world until they committed high treason and sold out to the devil according to 1 John 5:19.

Psalm 8:4-8

What is man that you are mindful of him, the son of man that you care for him? You made him a little lower than the *(heavenly beings) and crowned him with glory and honor. You made him **ruler over the works of your hands**; you put everything under his feet: all flocks and herds, and beasts of the field, the birds of the air, and the fish of the sea, all that swim in the paths of the seas.

Some think that the fall of man has released us from any responsibility of fulfilling this great commission from God over His creation. The fact that David was quoting Genesis shows that it is still our responsibility. God's spiritual law stands true, "*For God's gifts and his call are irrevocable*" Romans 11:29. What the devil stole, Jesus restored, "*For if, by the trespass of the one man, death reigned through the one man, how much more will those who receive God's abundant provision of grace and of the gift of righteousness, reign in life through the one man, Jesus Christ*" Romans 5:17.

When Jesus was functioning in His earthly ministry, He exercised spiritual authority over the devil, and the natural elements. He caused water to be turned to wine, multiplied bread and fish to feed thousands, raised the dead, cast out devils, healed the sick, and stilled raging storms. Jesus did all of these things by the Spirit of God through the faith as an example for us to walk in- John 14:12-14; 1 John 2:5-6.

If that is not restored dominion, I don't know what is. In Matthew 28:18-20; Mark 16:17-20; Luke 10:18-20; Matthew 10:1,8, all these passages of Scripture reveal the power of attorney in action-delegated authority. At the Name of Jesus, every name shall bow (Philippians 2:9-11), and Jesus has given us His Name to use on His behalf.

Acts 10:38

“How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and power, and how he went around doing good and healing all who were under the power of the devil, because God was with him.”

1 John 3:8

The reason the Son of God appeared was to destroy the devil's work.

Let it be said of us as it was said of the Apostle Paul, and his company in Acts 17:6, (KJV) *“These that have turned the world upside down are come here also.”* Through Jesus we have been restored to a rightful place of spiritual authority. Satan may be the god of this world system, but he is not god over me or in my house. Spiritual authority is released through faith filled words from our spirit.

In John 10:34, Jesus was quoting Psalm 82:6 which reads, *“I said, ‘You are gods’; you are all sons of the Most High.”* On the previous page, in Psalm 8:4-8 I put a “*” by the words, “(heavenly beings)”. That Hebrew word is “Elohiym” which is the name for God. The translators put angels, but Jesus said we are a little lower than God Himself. Ephesians 2:6 says we have been seated together with Jesus at the right hand of the Father. Being at God's right hand is being in a position of authority.

Give The Devil Fits By Using The Name Of Jesus!

Zechariah 12:1, “The Lord who stretches out the heavens, who lays the foundation of the earth, and who forms the spirit of man within him...”

Isaiah 57:16, “I will not accuse forever, nor will I always be angry, for then the spirit of man would faint before me- the breath of man that I have created.”

John 4:23-24, “Yet a time is coming and has now come when the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and truth, for they are the kind of worshipers the Father seeks. God is a spirit, and his worshipers must worship in spirit and in truth.”



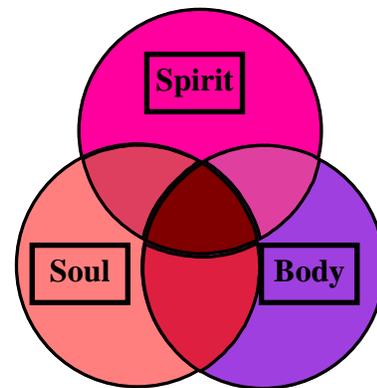
2. God Created you as a Three Part Being

God originally created man in His image and likeness as we have already pointed out. God is a spirit being, and we are spirit beings like Him. Our relationship with Him is spiritual through faith in God's Word. Yes it can be expressed through the soul and body, but it must be directed primarily through our spirit. For most Christians it's the other way around. Jesus said that the time is **now** for us to worship, and serve God by our spirit, not just our soul and body. Let's now take a close look at the reality of our human spirit.

Man was created a tri-cotomy just as the glorious Godhead is referred to as the Divine Trinity. We are not just a physical body, just as the Godhead is not the Father God alone. I am a spirit, I have a soul, and I live in a body. The Godhead is comprised of God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit. The three parts to our identity is Spirit, Soul & Body. It is essential for us to grasp this reality in order to understand how faith works.

**May God himself, the God of peace,
sanctify you through and through.
May your whole spirit, soul and body
be kept blameless at the coming of
our Lord Jesus Christ.**

1 Thessalonians 5:23



Some are led to believe that man is only a di-cotomy- two part being, consisting of soul and body. They believe that the eternal aspect of man is his soul; his will, intellect and emotions. Scripture however, points out that there is as much difference between the spirit and soul of man as there is between his soul and body.

Hebrews 4:12

For the word of God is living and active. Sharper than any double-edged sword, it penetrates even to dividing soul and spirit, joints and marrow; it judges the thoughts and attitudes of the heart.

According to the above Scripture, the soul and spirit of man can be divided or distinguished as separate entities. Only through God's Word can we make that distinction. Something needs to be pointed out here, man is the only creature in this class on earth. The animal kingdom are not spirit beings. They are physical beings that are driven by instinct. Some animals seem to exhibit rudimentary soulish qualities, but they fall far short of man's capacity and potential.

2 Peter 2:12

But these men blaspheme in matters they do not understand. They are like brute beasts, creatures of instinct, born only to be caught and destroyed, and like brute beasts they too will perish.

Jude 1:10

Yet these men speak abusively against whatever they do not understand; and what things they do understand by instinct, like unreasoning animals- these are the very things that destroy them.

2 Peter 2:22

Of them the proverbs are true: “A dog returns to its vomit,” and “A sow that is washed goes back to her wallowing in the mud.”

The fall of man has brought him to the depths of baseness, at times man acts like an animal. That does not mean that we are animals. Saved and unsaved, we will all have to give an account to God one day, but the Bible makes no reference to this for animals. Some false religions say that when man dies, he comes back to life as an animal or another person. Some cults say that when a man dies, he does not exist anymore. The Holy Bible does not teach any of these false doctrines. When an animal dies, there is no after life for that creature, it just ceases to exist. However, when a human being dies, only the physical body perishes, his spirit, and soul lives on for eternity in heaven or hell. For more Bible reading on the resurrection, please read 1 Corinthians Chapter 15; Philippians 3:20-21; 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18.

Hebrews 9:27

Just as man is destined to die once, and after that to face judgment.

Acts 24:15-16

I have the same hope in God as these men, that there will be a resurrection of both the righteous and the wicked. So I strive always to keep my conscience clear before God and man.

To illustrate the above point, let's look at a real account recorded in the Bible. Jesus shared a real story that happened to two men- The rich man and Lazarus. This is not a parable like some think. A parable of Jesus would always start off with this kind of verbiage Mark 4:30, “*What shall we say the kingdom of God is like, or what parable shall we use to describe it?*” Jesus would use “*Like*” or “*As*” as a comparison, also known in English grammar as a simile. In the true story concerning the rich man and Lazarus in Luke 16:19-31, Jesus starts out by saying, “*There was a rich man who was dressed in purple and fine linen and lived in luxury every day. At his gate was laid a beggar named Lazarus, covered with sores.*” These were people who actually lived, and Jesus narrates the fate of both. Below, I am going to list some points I would like you to consider:

- **The two men died physically and they went to a place in the heart of the earth. The rich man went into hell, and Lazarus went into Abraham's bosom.**
- **One was in torment, and the other was comforted. They were even more acutely aware of their surroundings after death.**
- **The rich man could recognize Lazarus, and evidently knew it was Abraham at his side.**
- **The rich man still had his memory, and expressed emotion for his brothers who were still on the earth.**

The Spiritual Realm Is More Real Than The Natural Realm!

Consider the incarnation of Jesus Christ who was, who is, and who is to come- Matthew 1:18-24. What about the transfiguration of Jesus when He had talked to Moses and Elijah- Matthew 17:1. What about all the people who had risen from the dead, particularly Lazarus His friend- Luke 8:55. All these incidents reveal the reality of the unseen spiritual realm, but just because it is unseen to the physical realm, does not mean it is not real. It was the unseen realm that created this natural realm we live in.

Hebrews 11:1-3, 6

Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. This is what the ancients were commended for. Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that what is seen was not made out of what was visible. And without faith it is impossible to please God, because anyone who comes to him must believe that he exists and that he rewards those who earnestly seek him.

The whole purpose of faith is to take the unseen, and make it seen. We cannot see words, but faith filled words will shape our world into something beautiful, full of God's life and blessing. As I have mentioned before, faith is of the heart or spirit of man. As we speak words of faith from our spirit, mountains will move out of the way, the impossible becomes possible. In order to operate in that realm, we must understand that we are spirit beings, and learn to operate in that realm.

1Corinthians 2:10-11

But God has revealed it to us by his Spirit. The Spirit searches all things, even the deep things of God. For who among men knows the thoughts of a man except the man's spirit within him?

When the Bible refers to believing with your heart (Exp. Rom.10:9), it is not referring to the muscle that pumps blood throughout your body, it is talking about your spirit. Where is that spirit located you may ask, the Bible has the answer.

**The spirit of man is the candle of the Lord,
searching all the inward parts of the belly.
Proverbs 20:27 KJV**

**But whoever drinks of the water that I will give
him, will never thirst; but the water that I will
give him will be in him a well of water springing
up into everlasting life. John 4:14 KJV**

**If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and
drink. He that believes on me as the Scriptures
have said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of
living water. John 7:38 KJV**



The heart in Biblical context refers to the very center of man's being- his/her spirit.

The new birth is a rebirth of the human spirit; the spirit of man is born again- **John 3:3; 2Cor. 5:17**

The new birth is a spiritual circumcision- **Romans 2:29; Colossians 2:11; Titus 3:4; Acts 7:51**

It's the spirit of man that has the life, love and nature of God in it- **Romans 5:5; 1 John 5:12**

It's with our spirit that we believe- **Acts 16:14; 2 Corinthians 3:3; Romans 10:10-11**

It's with our spirit that we worship God and do His will- **Ephesians 5:19; 6:6**

It's in our spirit that the Holy Spirit dwells; our body is the temple of our spirit- **1 Corinthians 3:16;6:19**

Let's define the three parts of man in more detail:

Man is a Spirit (<i>Conscience</i>)	- Conscience is the voice of our human spirit
He has a Soul (<i>Emotions, Will, Intellect</i>)	- Reason is the voice of our soul
He lives in a Body (<i>5 Senses</i>)	- Feelings is the voice of our physical body

With our spirit we contact God, with our soul we contact the intellectual realm, and with our body we contact the physical or natural world. Conscience is the voice of our spirit, it is the inner moral compass that tells us what is right from wrong- Hebrews 10:22; 1 Samuel 24:5; 25:31; Acts 24:16; 1 Corinthians 8:7; 10:25-27. If a person is born again, then their conscience is a safe guide. The conscience of an unbeliever is seared, and corrupted permitting him/her to do whatever they want- 1 Timothy 4:2; Titus 1:15.

When we understand ourselves in the light of God's Word, a greater sense of unity can be achieved between our spirit, soul and body. Each part of us, when functioning in its proper place is a blessing. For example, we need our body to allow us to move and operate in this natural realm, but suppose our body did not listen to our mind, and did whatever it wanted. Our soul allows us to communicate and operate by thoughts patterns, but suppose it took the place of our spirit to function in the spiritual realm?

Unfortunately, many Christians are carnal, which means to be body ruled- 1 Corinthians 3:1-5. They still live to satisfy its appetites in a bad way. Other Christians are so dominated by their mind that everything has to be logical, based on physical evidence before they believe anything- John 20:24-29. Yet some Christians become so spiritually minded that they are no earthly good. The natural (Soul/Body), and the supernatural (Spirit of Man) coming together make an explosive force for God. To achieve this harmony amongst our three parts takes time, and is the true gauge to spiritual maturity.

2 Corinthians 4:16-18

Therefore we do not lose heart. Though outwardly we are wasting away, yet inwardly we are being renewed day by day. For our light and momentary troubles are achieving for us an eternal glory that far outweighs them all. So we fix our eyes not on what is seen, but on what is unseen. For what is seen is temporary, but what is unseen is eternal. Now we know that if the earthly tent we live in is destroyed, we have a building from God, an eternal house in heaven, not built by human hands.

Remember, the inward man is eternal. Our minds are renewed day by day by the Word of God- Romans 12:2. Even though our outward man, the earthly tent we live in is wasting away (aging), we have a promise that we will be clothed with our heavenly dwelling; so that what is mortal may be swallowed up by life. In the mean time, the Holy Spirit quickens (makes alive), our mortal body even though some day we will lay it aside for a new spiritual outfit- Romans 8:11.

Here is a list of spirit beings other than man as mentioned in the Bible:

Glorious Godhead-

God The Father

God The Son

(Matthew 28:19)

God The Holy Spirit

Elect Angels-

Serephim (Isa.6:2,6)

Cheribim (Gen.3:24)

Arch Angels (Jude 1:9; Luke 1:19)

**Fallen Angels
Demon Spirits**

**Lucifer & 1/3 Of The Angels Of God (Rev.20:2;12:4;Jude 1:6)
Unclean (Mark 3:30 KJV)
Spirit's Of Infirmary (Luke 13:11)
Religious Spirits (1 Timothy 4:1-5), and many others.**

3. Spiritual Growth

We have been talking about, "Man is a spirit being, created in the image of God;" however, in order for our spirit to grow, we must learn how to feed our spirit the right diet. Consider that old saying, "You are what you eat." This is definitely a true statement in a spiritual context, "Spiritually, we are what we hear, see and read." So let's feed on God's Word, it's our spiritual food. As we meditate on the Scriptures, our spirit is nourished and built up. Some Christians will feed their physical body three hot meals a day, but feed their spirit only one cold snack a week, and wonder why they are weak spiritually. If we will just "Let the Word of Christ dwell in us richly" according to Colossians 3:16, faith will abide in us richly. Our faith level can be measured by the level of God's Word in us through Bible meditation- Joshua 1:8.

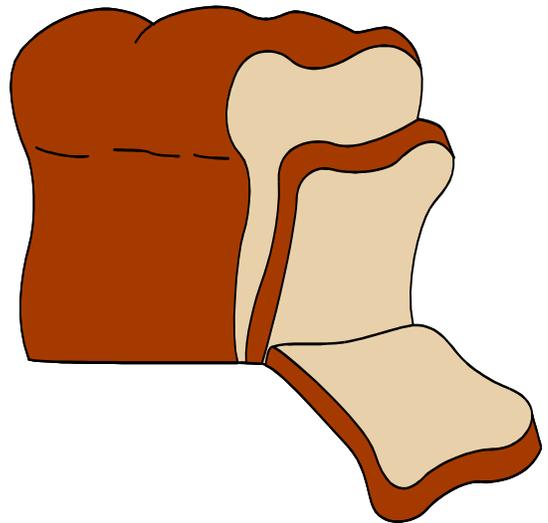
Jesus answered, "It is written: 'Man does not live on bread alone, but on every word that comes from the mouth of God.'"

Matthew 4:4

**How sweet are your promises to my taste,
sweeter than honey to my mouth!**

Psalms 119:103

**Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual
milk, so that by it you may grow up in
your salvation, now that you have tasted
that the Lord is good. 1 Peter 2:2-3**



There are four steps that we can take in order to develop our human spirit. I learned these from Kenneth Hagin, and have found them to be very effective in my life:

- * Meditate On The Word Of God**
- * Practice The Word Of God In Your Life**
- * Put The Word Of God First Place In Your Life**
- * Instantly Obey The Voice Of Your Spirit**

As we train our human spirit, we will become more conscience of our spirit, and the leading of the Holy Spirit in the affairs of life. God does not want us to wander through life aimlessly wondering what His will is for our life. Primarily, God's Word is God's will according to Romans 12:1-2, but what about the specific areas in our lives- what car or house should I buy, should I marry this one or that one etc. Jesus sent the Holy Spirit from the Father to live and abide with us forever. It is through our spirit that the Holy Spirit is going to guide us in this life. Primarily the Spirit of truth will lead us by an inward witness or intuition. It will register on our spirit as a smooth peace or unction to go ahead in a certain direction. He also leads us by an inward check, like a red light that says stop, look and listen; or a peace to go.

Please read Romans 8:14.

Unit 5 Review:

What is the significance of being created in God's image as it pertains to faith?

In what way did Jesus demonstrate that our dominion has been restored?

Explain the tri-cotomy of man- particularly the unique aspects of each part?

How is our spirit being developed- what constitutes spiritual growth?

B. Life and Death are in the Power of the Tongue

Proverbs 18:21

The tongue has the power of life and death, and those that love it will eat its fruit.

We are partakers of the fruit of our mouths all our lives whether we know it or not. We alone possess the power to choose the words we speak; as a result, our lives are either full of life or death. Jesus said in Mark 11:23 that, “*you can have what you say.*” We are the ones who make the beds we lay in. In other words I am a product today of the words I spoke yesterday. These truths and more will be covered in the proceeding pages. I encourage you take a close look at the vocabulary you use, and examine whether the words you speak are working for you or against you.

1. It Matters what you Say

Psalm 19:14

May the words of my mouth and the meditation of my heart be pleasing in your sight, O Lord, my Rock and my Redeemer.

Those that say they can, and those that say they can't are both right. Words are the most powerful thing in the universe. The words we speak will either put us over or hold us in bondage. Unfortunately, when it comes to prayer, many of us pray the problem instead of the answer. We bind God's hands from working on our behalf because of our unbelief. Praying and speaking the problem only makes it bigger, and releases the devil to enforce it more in our lives. We need to train ourselves to agree with, and only speak God's Word out of our mouths.

Matthew 12:36-37

Jesus said, “But I tell you that men will have to give account on the day of judgment for every careless word they have spoken. For by your words you will be acquitted, and by your words you will be condemned.”

Careless Word (Greek)= Useless, barren, idle, and inactive words. Words that are void of faith. In the latter part Romans 14:23 it says, “*And everything that does not come from faith is sin.*” We live in a society that is very loose in their choice of words. When I first read the above passages of Scripture, I was shocked that it really matters what one says. Since I have studied this subject in depth, I have come to the realization that my life can be dramatically different by choosing to speak God's Word instead. As I said before, I am today based on the words I have spoken yesterday. Some people think that this whole issue of right speaking, and believing is a legalistic bondage. Yet I have watched their lives, and seen the defeat their careless words have produced.

What I mean by careless words is simply speaking words that are contrary to what the Bible says about the situation. Very often these people will speak what they feel or what they see in the natural. Some go as far as saying what the devil says about them, “I am a failure,” “I am just an old sinner saved by grace,” “I am nothing.” In an effort to be humble they shoot themselves in the foot, and block the blessings of God.

I remember this one song I heard that goes something like this, “This is my confession Lord, that I am weak, so very weak, but you are strong.” The problem with this song is that it creates two separate groups. The Christian on the one side wallowing in weakness, and the Lord on the other side in strength.

The Bible brings us together in Christ so that we can say according to the Word, *“I can do everything through him who gives me strength”* Philippians 4:13. Yes it is true that apart from Him we can do nothing (John 15:5), but some Christian circles major on that, and confess weakness according to their definition of spirituality. That kind of talking robs people from God’s highest, and best for their lives.

So many Christians live beaten, and defeated lives, and it is manifested by their conversation. Don’t ever allow a single word to come out of your mouth that contradicts what God says about you through His Holy Written Word. Mark it down, it’s a spiritual law, you will have what you say, and if you don’t like what you have then change what you are saying, and keep speaking what God’s says.



He who guards his mouth and his tongue keeps himself from calamity. Proverbs 21:23

He who guards his lips guards his soul, but he who speaks rashly will come to ruin. Proverbs 13:3

Some of the tragedy that comes into our lives is the result of words that we have spoken over and over again. We will study faith in more detail further on in this study, but one thing I should note here is that faith works like a seed. The moment we release faith filled words, it takes time for it to produce the substance of what we hope for. Jesus would often say, *“According to your faith be it unto you”* Matthew 9:29; Luke 17:19. Faith can work in the reverse just as much as it can in the positive, because it is a spiritual law. Like natural laws it has no respect for persons. If we co-operate with the law it will bless us, if we violate and abuse it, the law can kill us- take for example, the law of gravity.

Faith comes by hearing and hearing by the Word of God. This principle of faith denotes a continual act of hearing the promise over a process of time. In other words, just saying it once will not produce any results. So it is with speaking doubt and unbelief, it won’t produce death right away. So if we make a mistake and say something negative by mistake, don’t worry we are not cursed by saying it one or two times. However, if we keep on saying, “I will never do that right” or “Johnny you will never amount to anything” or “You will have an accident if you keep riding that motor bike” mark it down, the law of faith will eventually bring those words to pass. Faith comes by, is expressed through, and brings substance to WORDS.

I believe that God operates, and deals with our lives according to Scripture. Nowhere in the New Testament does it say that God is responsible for bringing tragedy, and accidents into our lives in order to teach us some deep mysterious lesson or accomplish some sovereign purpose in order to make us more humble. We also blame the devil for negative events that take place in our lives, when often times we have made the bed we are sleeping in.

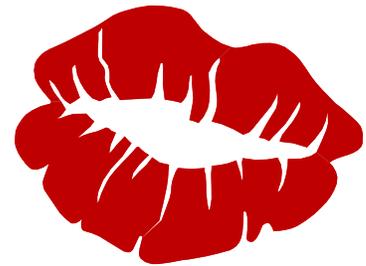
Words Will Work For You Or Against You!

According to 1 Corinthians 10:6 it says, “Now these things occurred as examples, to keep us from setting our hearts on evil things as they did” speaking of the Israelites in the Old Testament, and the mistakes they made. Educators say that we should study ancient history in order to keep us from repeating their mistakes. This principle is already found here in Scripture. There are countless examples of people recorded in the Bible who got in trouble with their mouths. The most significant and far reaching example that comes to my mind is the story about Moses and the people of Israel who had just come up to the Jordan river to spy out the land. It is important to note that God had already promised on oath that He had given the land to the people of Israel. The whole purpose of leading them out of Egypt was that God had given them a land that flowed with milk and honey.

Well, they finally got there, and Moses sent 12 spies at the Lord’s command to check the land out. The interesting thing to note here is that God never mentioned anything about the giants, and the fortified cities. The Israelites must have thought that they were just going to walk in, and it would all fall in their laps. They were in for a big surprise. However, along the way on their journey to the Promised Land, God demonstrated His awesome power over and over again. So there should not have been any doubt that God was with them, and if He said the land was theirs, it was!

They gave Moses this account: “We went into the land to which you sent us, and it does flow with milk and honey! Here is its fruit. But the people who live there are powerful, and the cities are fortified and very large. Then Caleb silenced the people before Moses and said, “We should go up and take possession of the land, for we can certainly do it.” But the men who had gone up with him said, “We can’t attack those people; they are stronger than we are.” And they spread among the Israelites a bad report about the land they had explored.”

Numbers 13:27-32



Let me ask you a question, why would the Bible refer to the testimony of the 10 spies as a bad or evil report? Let me suggest to you that it was not so much the testimony about what they saw. The people who were powerful, and the fortified cities, because that was the reality in the natural. Faith never denies the existence of circumstances, it denies the circumstance from exalting itself above the Word of God. It was the conclusion they came to that was sin. They had God’s promise on one hand, and the report of the 10 spies on the other. The report went beyond facts to opinion that rejected God’s Word to them.

Notice in verse 32, they said, “*The land we explored devours those living in it. All the people we saw there are of great size. We seemed like grasshoppers in our own eyes, and we looked the same to them.*” The image of defeat was still in their hearts from Egypt, and it was released out of their mouths. God delivered Israel out of Egypt, but He could never get Egypt out of most of them. This same poor self image plagues the Church today, they keep focusing on their own weaknesses and inability instead of reaching out in faith to God’s promises to put them over in life. Let’s be strong and courageous and take God at His Word!

But what about what God had promised them. Instead of embracing God's powerful promise they embraced the evil report of the spies that went beyond reporting facts, and proclaimed, "*We can't attack those people.*" However, Caleb said, "*We should go up and take possession of the Land, for we can certainly do it.*" Those that say they can and those that say they can't are both right. Words are the most powerful thing in the universe. The words we speak will either put us over or hold us in bondage. The majority spoke the problem and the minority spoke the promise. When it was all said and done, the majority got what they said, and died in the desert, and the minority received what they said and entered into the Promised Land 40 years later- delay does not mean denial.

Numbers 14:1-4

That night all the people of the community raised their voices and wept aloud. All the Israelites grumbled against Moses and Aaron, and the whole assembly said to them, "If only we had died in Egypt! Or in this desert! Why is the Lord bringing us to this land only to let us fall by the sword? Our wives and children will be taken as plunder. Wouldn't it be better for us to go back to Egypt? And they said to each other, "We should choose a leader and go back to Egypt."

There is another principle I would like for us to see, which Jesus spoke about in Matthew 12:33-34, "*Make a tree good and its fruit will be good, or make a tree bad and its fruit will be bad, for a tree is recognized by its fruit. You brood of vipers, how can you who are evil say anything good? **For out of the overflow of the heart the mouth speaks.***" Jesus said, whatever is in our heart is going to come out of our mouth. The words we hear on a continual basis (faith & doubt come by hearing words) will eventually register in our spirit. Once those words are in our heart, they will in turn come out of our mouth, and those things which we say will eventually come to pass- for good or evil.

The principle of believing in our heart, and confessing with our mouth is found in Romans 10:9-10 concerning salvation. The same principle is true concerning death and defeat as illustrated above. Words can originate from our head or our heart. Thoughts (which are translated into words) that are in our head may have been placed there by people or the devil, but until we speak them out and take ownership of them, those seeds (words & thoughts) will die unborn. The people of Israel took ownership of that evil report by repeating it out of their mouths, and it got into their hearts. As a result they sinned and rebelled against God and as Jesus said, "*according to your faith be it unto you*" they got what they said.

Numbers 14:28

The Lord said to Moses, "So tell them, 'As surely as I live, declares the Lord, I will do to you the very things I heard you say: In this desert your bodies will fall- everyone of you twenty years old or more who was counted in the census and who has grumbled against me. Not one of you will enter the land I swore with uplifted hand to make your home, except Caleb and Joshua. As for your children that you said would be taken as plunder, I will bring them in to enjoy the land you have rejected. But you- your bodies will fall in this desert. Your children will be shepherds here for forty years, suffering for your unfaithfulness, until the last of your bodies lies in the desert.'" (Read also vs11, 21-23)

Remember the Scripture, "*The tongue has the power of life and death, and those who love it will eat its fruit.*" Proverbs 18:21. They received the fruit of their lips- they spoke death and received it. Yes, it matters what we say!

The people of Israel were without excuse and so are we. There is no excuse for doubting God to perform His Word, and His precious promises. So what if there are giants in the land, our God is an awesome God, *“What, then, shall we say in response to this? If God is for us, who can be against us? He who did not spare his own Son, but gave him up for us all- how will he not also, along with him, graciously give us all things?”* Romans 8:31.

I like what Joshua and Caleb said, *“Joshua and Caleb, who were among those who had explored the land, tore their clothes and said to the entire Israelite assembly, ‘The land we passed through and explored is exceedingly good. If the Lord is pleased with us, he will lead us into that land, a land flowing with milk and honey, and will give it to us. Only do not rebel against the Lord. And do not be afraid of the people of the land, because we will swallow them up. Their protection is gone, but the Lord is with us. Do not be afraid of them.’ But the whole assembly **talked about stoning them.**”*

Don't be too surprised if religious Christians want to stone you when you start talking victory, and disturb their pity party of doubt and unbelief. The confession of Caleb and Joshua was an expression of their heart. I'll say it again, your confession is the expression of your heart. Faith says that we receive what we believe in our hearts, and speak out of our mouths. This is known as the spirit of faith according to 2 Corinthians 4:13. I like what God said about Caleb:

Numbers 14:24

“But because my servant Caleb has a different spirit and follows me wholeheartedly, I will bring him into the land he went to, and his descendants will inherit it.

2. What Words will do for you

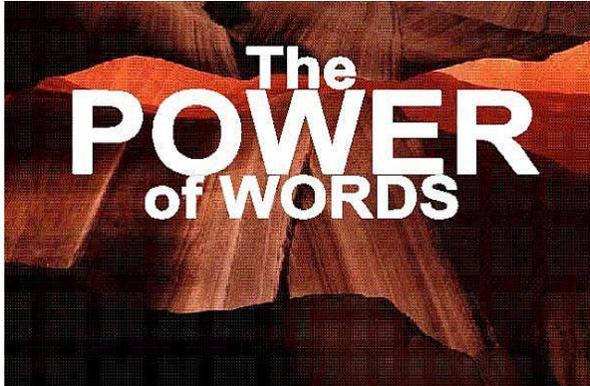
Words will do three things for you:

- 1) **Locates us spiritually: Mt:12:34-35; Prv. 16:23-** You can locate a person by what they say if they are in faith or fear.
- 2) **Sets the land marks of our life: Jms.3:3-4-** You will never rise nor experience God's blessing beyond your confession of God's Word. If you say you can't, then you can't!
- 3) **Words we speak will affect our spirit: Prv.18:4,8-** Words that you speak are like seeds that are planted in your heart and will produce in time.

So many Christians have never dared to confess who they are in Christ. Since we have been talking about the awesome affect words have, why not start finding Scriptures that reveals what Christ has provided for us, and start speaking it in first person. For example in 2 Corinthians 5:17, “Since I am in Christ, I am a new creation; the old has gone, the new has come.” Start looking though the Epistles (Romans - Revelation) for Scriptures like this. By agreeing with God's Word, the things we say will get in our heart, and transform our life. Hebrews 10:23, *“Let us hold unswervingly to the hope we profess (or confess), for he who promised is faithful.”* Hebrews 4:14, *“Therefore, since we have a great high priest who has gone through the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold firmly to the faith we profess (or confess).”* The Greek states it like this- Let us hold fast to saying the same thing. Here are some more passages of Scripture to read- 1Timothy 6:13; 1 John 4:15(KJV); Revelation 12:11. Christianity is known as the great confession- confession always proceeds possession.

Words Are Containers

If you saw someone with a gun, you would ask, “Hey, is that thing loaded.” Have you ever seen someone shoot their mouth off, wounding people, and killing their dreams. There is nothing more dangerous than a person with an unbridled tongue.



“Reckless words pierce like a sword, but the tongue of the wise brings healing.” Proverbs 12:18

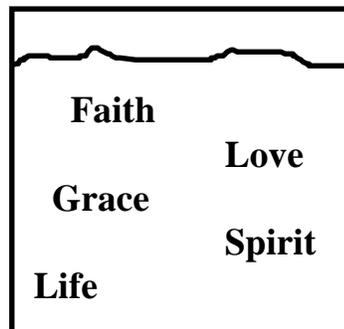
“A prudent man keeps knowledge to himself, but the heart of fools blurts out folly.” Proverbs 12:23

“Like a madman shooting firebrands or deadly arrows is a man who deceives his neighbor and says, ‘I was only joking!’” Proverbs 26:18-19

David gives a vivid description of words in Psalm 59:7; 64:3, *“See what they spew from their mouths- they spew out swords from their lips.”* *“Who sharpen their tongues like swords and aim their words like deadly arrows.”* Words contain life or death, faith or doubt, love or hate. Words can actually change, and create the very atmosphere of a room. If harsh words were spoken to our spouse or children in the morning, those words will hang over them throughout the day. The Bible says in Proverbs 16:24 that, *“Pleasant words are a honeycomb, sweet to the soul and healing to the bones.”* Beautiful words of comfort and edification will put a song in their mouths and a spring in their step. Proverbs 25:11, *“A word aptly spoken is like apples of God in settings of silver.”*

“My son, pay attention to what I say; listen closely to my words. Do not let them out of your sight, keep them within your heart; for they are life to those who find them and health to a man’s whole body.” Proverbs 4:20-22

Jesus said, “The words I have spoken to you are spirit and they are life.” John 6:63



It matters what we say, because the words we speak contain spiritual substances that can produce either life or death in us or others. Just imagine that our mouth is like a gun, the tongue is the trigger, and words are the bullets that we shoot. The next time we take aim with our mouth, let’s use this sword of our spirit on the devil, but speak life producing and healing words over people.

3. Me and My Big Mouth

Beware of Talking Too Much- Learning The Value Of Silence: I don't mean to be vulgar but have you ever met someone with diarrhea of the mouth. They are always talking about something or someone. The tongue has the potential to be a destructive or life giving force. Just based on the law of averages, a person who talks a lot has a greater chance of putting their foot in their mouth than someone who uses words with restraint- *"Everyone should be quick to listen, slow to speak"* James 1:19.

Proverbs 10:19; 18:2, 6-7; 20:19

When words are many, sin is not absent, but he who holds his tongue is wise. A fool finds no pleasure in understanding but delights in airing his own opinions. A fool's lips brings strife, and his mouth invites a beating. A fool's mouth is his undoing, and his lips are a snare to his soul. A gossip betrays a confidence; so avoid a man who talks too much.

Playing around with words is like playing with dynamite, it can get us into trouble real fast. Let's learn to be decisive with our words, speaking things that build others up. A mature believer has learned to hook their tongue to their heart rather than their flesh. People who just rattle off conversation from off the top of their head, are just asking for trouble. To be effective in this faith walk we must learn to be consistent in the faith talk. As soon as we release our faith filled words, they can be nullified, by speaking the wrong words. Developing the fruit of self-control is of vital importance in this area.

Proverbs 15:2; 16:23; 17:27-28

The tongue of the wise commends knowledge, but the mouth of the fool gushes folly. A wise man's heart guides his mouth, and his lips promote instruction. A wise man's heart guides his mouth, and his lips promote instruction. A man of knowledge uses words with restraint, and a man of understanding is even-tempered. Even a fool is thought wise if he keeps silent, and discerning if he holds his tongue. The tongue that brings healing is a tree of life, but a deceitful tongue crushes the spirit.

When we utter perverse speech (Speaking contrary to the truth of God's Word), we are deceiving our heart, and producing a false image within our spirit. This in turn is reproduced in our lives in a negative fashion. Even in everyday natural things, don't call things something they are not- "That person sure is fat" when they are as thin as a rail.

"If any of you thinks himself to be religious and does not bridle his tongue, he deludes and deceives his own heart, this person's religious service is worthless (futile, barren.)"
James 1:26 (AMP)



Guard Your Heart- The Words You Speak Affect Your Spirit!

We know that a double minded man will not receive his prayers answered according to James 1:6-7. The same thing applies to someone with a forked tongue. The key to effective faith is sanctifying our tongues to speak life, and utter words filled with faith- God's Word. Being filled with the Holy Spirit, and speaking with other tongues according to Acts 2:4 is a primary way to bring the tongue under control. Another key way is for us to renew our minds with God's Word according to Romans 12:1-2.

James 3:7-10

All kinds of animals, birds, reptiles and creatures of the sea are being tamed and have been tamed by man, but no man can tame the tongue. It is a restless evil, full of deadly poison. With the tongue we praise our Lord and Father, and with it we curse men, who have been made in God's likeness. Out of the same mouth come praise and cursing. My brothers, this should not be.

It is so imperative that we understand that the words we speak more than anything else, affects our spirit. Have you heard the old saying, "Sticks and stones may break my bones, but words can never hurt me." Nothing could be farther from the truth. Jesus said in Matthew 12:37, "*For by your words you will be justified and by your words you will be condemned.*"

Jesus said through this passage that words determines our eternal destination. Harsh words spoken by others against us will not affect us as much as when we agree with their testimony against us by speaking those very words over ourselves. The only power Satan has against the believer is deception. He takes full advantage over our ignorance of God's Word. The areas of truth we are ignorant of, are areas of darkness we are walking in- Psalm 119:105,130. We are just sitting ducks, just waiting to be taken advantage of. Ignorance in the body of Christ concerning this subject has had its toll in our lives, and it's time for us to open our eyes, and start bringing our mouths under control.

Isaiah 54:17 NKJV

"No weapon formed against you shall prosper, and every tongue which rises against you in judgment you shall condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the Lord, and their righteousness is from Me," Says the Lord.

I have heard people say, "Well, I guess I am catching a cold, I sure don't feel very good." The devil came knocking on the door of their body with physical symptoms, and they just opened the door wide open and said, "Come on in Mr. Devil, put that flu on me, I've been expecting you." Our words gives authority to God or the devil to move in our life. Speaking God's Word releases the ability of God in our life. Speaking the devil's words releases his ability. Speaking God's Word brings faith, speaking the devil's words brings fear. You may be wondering how in the world could I speak the devil's words. Jesus said to the religious leaders of his day in John 8:44, "*You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out your father's desire. He was a murderer from the beginning, not holding to the truth, for there is no truth in him. When he lies, he speaks his native language, for he is a liar and the father of lies.*"

Any thought or word that we hear from others that is contrary to written revelation of God's Word is a lie. Jesus said in John 17:17, "*Sanctify them by the truth; your word is truth.*" The key to true Biblical sanctification is for us to wash our mouths out with the Word!

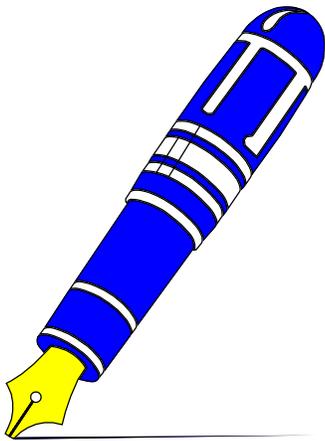
**Have You Washed Out Your Mouth With The Word
Lately?**

When those conflicting thoughts come, which are contrary to God's Word, speak out bold and loud what the Bible says about that issue. The key to knowing what is counterfeit is to know the genuine so well that the false sticks out like a sore thumb.

2 Corinthians 10:3-5

For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.

Getting back to the principle of words affecting our spirit, let's look at some Scriptures that really illustrate this truth when we put them together.



“My heart is stirred by a noble theme as I recite my verses for the king; my tongue is the pen of a skillful writer.”

Psalm 45:1

“Let love and faithfulness never leave you; bind them around your neck, write them on the tablet of your heart.”

Proverbs 3:3

“You show that you are a letter from Christ, the result of our ministry, written not with ink but with the Spirit of the living God, not on tablets of stone but on tablets of human hearts.”

2 Corinthians 3:3

Have you ever wondered what instrument is used to write upon the tablet of your heart, that's right it's that red thing in your mouth. The tongue is the instrument that we use to instruct our heart, and sow seeds that will produce in time after their own kind.

Proverbs 18:8

The words of a gossip are like choice morsels; they go down to a man's inmost parts.

There have been times where I have had to eat my own words? I said something rashly, and had to apologize. Actually whether we realize it or not, we are eating our words every day. Words are like a boomerang, they will come back and hit us. It takes maturity not to get flaky about this whole area of watching our words. People can push it to extremes, and get in bondage, just follow the guidelines that are laid out in Scripture, and trust the Holy Spirit to bring about the right balance.

Proverbs 18:20; 12:14

From the fruit of his mouth a man's stomach is filled; with the harvest from his lips he is satisfied. From the fruit of his lips a man is filled with good things as surely as the work of his hands rewards him.

A primary way to guard our heart is to watch our language. We need to be in the habit of asking ourselves, “is this the way Jesus would talk?” Am I talking the language of the world, the flesh or the devil? Is my conversation full of religious tradition that is embalmed with unbelief and failure? Let’s be diligent in checking up on the content of our speech. Many Christians are tripping on their lip, not knowing why they are receiving and experiencing less than God’s best in their lives. Rather, let’s be consistent in speaking life and blessing instead- Numbers 6:22-27.

Proverbs 4:20-24

My son, pay attention to what I say; listen closely to my words. Do not let them out of your sight, keep them within your heart; for they are life to those who find them and health to a man’s whole body. Above all else, guard your heart, for it is the wellspring of life. Put away perversity from your mouth; keep corrupt talk far from your lips.

The Word of God has a lot to say about words, and for good reason. As we have been discovering together, words that we speak are picked up by our inner ear, and transferred directly to our spirit, and affects our lives. Here are some examples of types of speech to avoid:

Ephesians 5:4; 4:29

Nor should there be obscenity, foolish talk or coarse joking, which are out of place, but rather thanksgiving. Let no foul or polluting language, nor evil word, nor unwholesome or worthless talk [ever] come out of your mouth; but only such [speech] as is good and beneficial to the spiritual progress of others, as is fitting to the need and the occasion, that it may be a blessing and give grace to those who hear it.

We all know that foul language is sin, but we limit that to just swear words that the world uses. When people start talking doubt, unbelief and failure, that kind of talk is just as apprehensible as cussing. Romans 14:23 says, “...and everything that does not come from faith is sin.” So often we limit God with our finite thinking, and speaking which is very insulting to Lord. Let’s get our mouth in agreement with the Bible, and do just what Jesus did when He was on the earth, “*For I did not speak of my own accord, but the Father who sent me commanded me what to say and how to say it. I know that his command leads to eternal life. So whatever I say is just what the Father has told me to say.” Now let’s look at 1 Thessalonians 2:13, “*And we thank God continually because, when you received the word of God, which you heard from us, you accepted it not as the word of men, but as it actually is, the Word of God, which is at work in you who believe.*”*

In a process of time we can train ourselves to only speak God’s Word in every situation, because perverse speech is speaking contrary to God’s holy written word. We won’t know what that is unless we spend time reading, studying, and meditating in the Bible until it dwells in us richly- Colossians 3:16.

**If We Are Going To Speak Doubt & Unbelief, We
Might As Well Cuss, Because It’s Just As Bad!**

People who talk a lot are usually guilty of one or more of these three sins:

- 1) **FOOLISH TALKING-** (Greek)-Useless, silly talk, idle speech, foolishness, buffoonery, dull or stupid, absurd & heedless. This kind of sin is typical of adolescents and people under some kind of substance abuse.
(Ephesians 4:28)
Jesting (Greek)-Witticism in a vulgar sense.
Corrupt Talk (Greek)-Worthless and rotten.
- 2) **EVIL SPEECH-** **Gossip**(Greek)- Whisperer, talebearer.
(2Cor. 12:20; Prv.20:19) **Slander**(Greek)- Defaming, evil report, infamy, scandal.
(Prv.10:8; Jms.4:11) This kind of speech is directed towards others with the express purpose of hurting, and destroying their reputation.
- 3) **VAIN SPEECH-** (Greek)- Untruth, a sham, deceit, falsehood, a lie, empty words and long winded speeches. This refers to people who are always talking about who they are, what they have, and what they are going to do-
(Ephesians 5:6 KJV) James 4:13-16. Basically boasting, and bragging on themselves.
(Psalms 59:12)

Most sins that are committed by mankind are sins of the mouth which is an expression of the heart. As Jesus said, *“Out of the abundance of the mouth the heart speaks.”* You may ask yourself, “How do I know if what I am saying is wrong?” In Ephesians 4:28-31, it says, *“And do not grieve the Holy Spirit of God...”* and then it goes on to talk about getting rid of bitterness, rage, anger, slander, malice, and brawling. All of which have its main expression through the mouth. If what you say grieves the Holy Spirit inside you, repent, and don’t talk like that anymore. Another gauge is found in Colossians 3:5-14, *“And now you must rid yourselves of all such things as these: anger, rage, malice, slander, and filthy language from your lips.”* This is a work of the Holy Spirit in you as you learn to walk in love and holiness. Is what you say in line with the love standard found here and in 1Corinthians chapter 13.

4. Sanctify your Mouth

You may be wondering, what does all this have to do with faith? The principles of faith are wrapped up in the use of words; particularly speaking in line with God’s Word. We must sanctify our mouth to speak only the truth otherwise we are just fooling ourselves if we think that we will be successful in operating in faith. Either we talk like a Christian or we talk like the world. We can’t expect to be walking in faith if we are still talking junk all the time. That is why I took the time to define what kind of speech we need to purge out of our lives so that our words will be true and decisive; in order to release the force of faith in our lives to its fullest potential.

Some people say, “Well, that just puts me in bondage, having to watch my words.” But you don’t know what bondage is, until you just say anything that you want to. That’s the greatest bondage you can get into. So many today have not understood the power of their words- *Words are the most powerful things in the universe!*



Illustration: Zechariah (Luke 1:5-24, 57-66)

Going along with the theme we have been studying on, “It Matters What You Say” let’s look at the story of Zechariah and Elizabeth who were old, and never had children. God wanted to use this couple to bring John the Baptist on the scene in order to prepare the way for Jesus. As a result, an angel of the Lord visits Zechariah in the temple when he was on duty as a Levite priest. The angel told him he was going to be a dad, but what was Zechariah’s response, “*How can I be sure of this? I am an old man and my wife is well along in years.*” Remember the principle Jesus revealed in Mark 11:23, in essence we will have what we say.

Therefore, in order to keep Zechariah from messing up God’s plan, and nullifying it by his doubt filled words, the angel took his ability to speak from him. From the time of that encounter with the angel until the time the baby was born, Zechariah could not talk. Some people think that the angel did that to him as punishment for doubting, but I believe it was to keep him from speaking anymore negative words that could abort God’s plan. But some say, “Oh but God is Sovereign, he can do whatever He wants to” that is true in one sense, that God has the ability, but not always the right. God cannot violate a man’s free will, and make mankind obey Him, nor can God violate His Word. To keep Zechariah from messing everything up, the Lord shut him up until the promise was fulfilled.

Psalm 141:3

Set a guard over my mouth, O Lord; keep watch over the door of my lips.

Proverbs 13:3

He who guards his lips guards his soul, but he who speaks rashly will come to ruin.

Psalm 34:11-16

Come, my children, listen to me; I will teach you the fear of the Lord. Whoever of you loves life and desires to see many good days, keep your tongue from evil and your lips from speaking lies. Turn from evil and do good; seek peace and pursue it. The eyes of the Lord are on the righteous and his ears are attentive to their cry; the face of the Lord is against those who do evil, to cut off the memory of them from the earth.

Here is a good confession to make in Psalm 49:3, “*My mouth will speak words of wisdom; the utterance from my heart will give understanding.*” Here’s another one in Psalm 37:30-31, “*The mouth of the righteous man utters wisdom, his tongue speaks what is just. The law of his God is in his heart; his feet do not slip.*” Notice that these Scriptures mirror the “Word of Faith” principles in Romans 10:8, when we put the Word in our mouth it will get into our heart.

Help, My Body Is Out Of Control!

We all have found ourselves in some of the biggest predicaments, and wondered how we got there. Here is a principle we can bank on, “Decisions determine our destiny.” We may have to live with the decisions we make, but have we ever thought about the factors that lead up to those decisions. One primary factor is, yes you got it, “WORDS.” I hope you have realized by now that all this talk about words is solely based on the Bible, because it has so much to say about the subject.

Here is something that surprises many folks, the words that we speak controls our body, creates thoughts in our minds, and affects our spirit. We have already discussed that last point, so let’s look at how words affect our body.

Medical research has discovered that the part of the brain which controls human speech is connected to every nerve in the body. The words we speak about ourselves can even affect our health, and what our body does and does not do.

“ We all stumble in many ways. If anyone is never at fault in what he says, he is a perfect man, able to keep his whole body in check.”
James 3:2

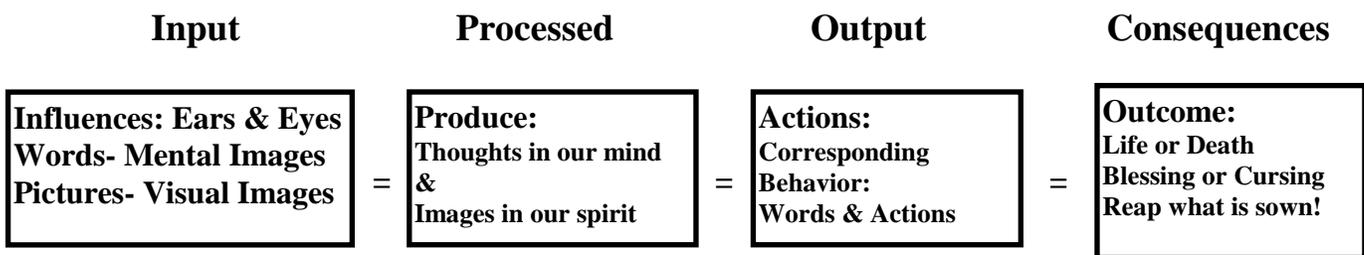


Our body is controlled by the words we speak every day. It’s simply acting out the words we spoke over it yesterday, and the day before that, and so on. Desire is created through words. Have you ever talked yourself into something? That is why marketing is big on words, and slogans in order to manipulate people into buying their products- they are sold through words. How does brain washing take place, through words that are spoken over and over again. In a Christian context this is a good thing:

Romans 12:1-2

Therefore, I urge you, brothers, in view of God’s mercy, to offer your bodies as living sacrifices, holy and pleasing to God- which is your spiritual worship. Do not conform any longer to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind. Then you will be able to test and approve what God’s will is- his good, pleasing, and perfect will.

Notice that our body is presented unto God as a living sacrifice through the renewing of our mind with the Word of God. Patterns of thinking produces corresponding behavior. However, this is a learned or developed response based on environmental influences. For example, let’s take a young person who watches 8 hours of TV and listens to 4 hours of rock music a day. What is taking place based on this kind of input in his/her life. GARBAGE IN AND GARBAGE OUT! Let’s examine the process here with the following flow chart.



In Proverbs 23:7 (KJV) it says, *“As a man thinketh in his heart so is he.”* Our words produce images in our mind (imagination) that will result in action in time. Whenever we hear a word like “Dog” immediately our mind creates a mental picture of a dog. The type of dog our mind brings up will be based on our experience, and the knowledge base we have of dogs. Suppose we say to someone who is very hungry, “Boy, I can’t wait to go on lunch, I am going to have a big, fat, juicy hamburger with all the toppings.” After a few minutes of describing this wonderful lunch we are going to have, this person we are talking to will be having all kinds of physiological reactions- salivating, lips smacking, nervous movements etc.

Do you see how words created this wonderful image of delicious food in their mind, and as a result their body was ready to run out the door, and have one of those things. As we study psychology, we come to understand that the brain determines how the body will respond, but take one step back. The mind is stimulated by words which we hear from others, and especially from words that are heard out of our own mouth.

These principles are all Biblical, as seen in the Holy Scriptures. Let's read on in James chapter three, it goes on to say:

James 3:3-4

When we put bits in the mouths of horses to make them obey us, we can turn the whole animal. Or take ships as an example. Although they are so large and are driven by strong winds, they are steered by a very small rudder wherever the pilot wants to go.

By this passage of Scripture, the words we choose to speak (based on the influences we have subjected ourselves to which have affected our mind and spirit), will set the course of our lives. We will find ourselves living out the confessions of our lips. It matters what we say! It would behoove us to pull back on the reigns of discretion over our mouths more often. Just speaking off the top of our heads can set things in motion that we will regret in the future. Spiritual maturity can be measured by the content, and quality of conversation a person engages in- James 1:26. Our lives are dominated by the words we speak. Whether we are spirit ruled, soul ruled or body ruled. It will be evident by the words we speak. We can locate people by simply listening to their words, whether they are in faith, fear, doubt or unbelief.

James 3:5-6

Likewise the tongue is a small part of the body, but it makes great boasts. Consider what a great forest is set on fire by a small spark. The tongue also is a fire, a world of evil among the parts of the body. It corrupts the whole person, sets the whole course of his life on fire, and is itself set on fire by hell.

Just think of it, the tongue has the power to set the whole course of a person's life on fire. The words we speak set the land marks of our lives, we will never rise above the confession of God's Word. Words fix the direction and destiny that we will arrive to- Deuteronomy 30:19; Joshua 24:15. I like what Jeremiah 1:6, 9 says, " 'Ah, Sovereign Lord,' I said, 'I do not know how to speak; I am only child.' Then the Lord reached out his hand and touched my mouth and said to me, 'Now, I have put my words in your mouth.'" If we do not know what to say, then speak God's Word. Speak the end result and not the problem, speak the answer, and not the circumstances. The tongue can get us into big trouble- Job 38:2; 40:4; Numbers 12:8.

It Matters What We Say!

Unit 6 Review:

Why does it matter what we say; what affect do words have on our lives?

What is meant by “Careless” or “Idle” words?

When the ten spies returned and reported to Moses, what does the Scriptures mean by a “Bad Report?”

What are the three things that words will do for us?

People who talk a lot are usually guilty of one or more of these three sins- explain?

C. Spiritual Laws



Just as there are natural laws that govern the course, and operation of the natural world, there are spiritual laws that govern the course, and operation of the spiritual world. The spiritual world has always been in existence, because God is a spirit being, and always pre-existed. The spirit realm is more real than the natural realm. The more we meditate on, and learn to operate in the spiritual world of God's Kingdom, the more real those laws will become to us. The most evident natural law to people is the law of gravity. This natural law works whether a person understands it fully or not, because it will affect them if they jump off a building. There is a cost/benefit side to every natural law. One benefit

of gravity is that it keeps us from floating away like a helium balloon. However, this law can cost us our lives when violated. People are killed every day because of their careless or accidental use of natural laws. Unfortunately ignorance provides no exemptions. These laws are impartial to age, gender, race or intelligence of the individual; when violated people get hurt. Therefore, like natural laws, it would behoove us to get to know the rules and operation of spiritual laws.

The most dangerous place to be in life, is to be ignorant of natural and spiritual laws. Ignorance is not bliss, it's deadly. Society has done a good job of informing people through the education system about the do's and don'ts of natural laws. It is the Church's responsibility to inform people of the cost/benefit side to spiritual laws. *God's Word is spiritual law.* Everything we need to know about spiritual laws is found in God's Word. God's Word works when we apply it properly to our situation. However, we have to go by God's rules for it to work. God has rules and regulations that govern His laws. When we operate in these spiritual laws, we must operate according to God's rules. Unfortunately, sometimes we have made assumptions, and spoken things we didn't mean and then say, "Well, I said that, but I really didn't mean it. I did say we are going bankrupt, but God knows what I meant." Spiritual laws are indiscriminate, we released those words into our spirit to produce in time. If we jump off a cliff and then the next moment change our mind, it's too late. Since we have learned to harness and use the laws of electricity, our world has greatly benefited. However, this same natural force, if uncontrolled or violated, will burn and kill folks. Proverbs 18:21 says, "*Life and death are in the power of the tongue.*"

In this lesson we are going to study a couple of spiritual laws that deal with words. Our words will either release the power of God or the devil in the earth. Depending on the words we speak, we are releasing either faith or fear in our lives. The choice is ours, but we have to live with the results whether we like them or not. I am excited that we can learn more about spiritual laws concerning words, according to our final authority- God's Word. Remember, we are not exempt from the consequences of violating spiritual laws just because we are ignorant of them.

Hosea 4:6

My people are destroyed from lack of knowledge.

God's Word Is Spiritual Law!

1. Words – A Creative Force

God's Word that is conceived in our heart, then formed by the tongue, and spoken out of our own mouth, becomes a spiritual force releasing the ability of God within us. The spoken Word of God is creative power. The kingdom of God responds to faith filled words. God never did anything that He didn't say first. He said it, then He did it. The power to do it was in the spoken Word. One translation of the Bible (The concordant literal NT) puts Luke 1:37 this way, *"It will not be impossible with God to fulfill his every declaration."*

Hebrews 11:3

By faith we understand that the universe was formed at God's command, so that what is seen was not made out of what was visible.

Point #1- God's Command

We see in the above passage of Scripture that the whole universe was created at, "God's command." In other words, when God spoke His faith filled words into the empty darkness, the act of creation was released. As I just shared previously, God never does anything without saying it first. This principle is absolutely essential in the operation of the law of faith.

You may say, "But that is God, He has the power, and authority to speak things into existence." We have already covered this point previously. God has created us in His class and in His image as spirit beings, not that we are equal to God, but we have been privileged to imitate Him as His children- Ephesians 5:1. As sons of God, created in His image, we have the awesome privilege to follow in His footsteps. All of God's power is in His Word, just waiting to be released through our lips:

Hebrews 1:3 (AMP)

The Son is the sole expression of the glory of God- the Light-being, the out-ricing of the divine- and he is the perfect imprint and very image of [God's] nature, upholding and maintaining and guiding and propelling the universe by His mighty word of power.

All of God's Power is in His Word. It is not that God's Word has His power, God's Word is His power. That is way the Spirit of God spoke through David in Psalm 138:2, (AMP) *"For you have exalted above all else your name and your word, and you have magnified your word above all your name!"* My name is only as good as my word, the same is true with God. When we speak God's Word into our hearts, and then back out of our mouths, we release the very spirit life of God to produce what we spoke, *"Jesus said, 'The words I have spoken to you are spirit and they are life.'" (John 6:63)*

Isaiah 59:21

"As for me, this is my covenant with them," says the Lord. "My Spirit, who is on you, and my words that I have put in your mouth will not depart from your mouth, or from the mouths of your children, or from the mouths of their descendants from this time on and forever," says the Lord.

When God's creative Word is spoken, it becomes an active spiritual force that works night and day to bring about the fulfillment of that Word of God which was spoken. When in need, find promises from God in the Bible and meditate on them according to Joshua 1:8-9. It's not our own originated words that are so powerful as it is speaking after what God already said is ours through Jesus Christ according to 2 Corinthians 1:20, *"For not matter how many promises God has made, they are "Yes" in Christ."*

We have the right as children of God to speak God's words after Him, and they will work for us as they work for Him according to our faith. Let the creative force of the tongue be used in speaking God's promises, and thus bring all things that pertain to life and godliness into our lives- 2 Peter 1:3-4; Psalms 147:15,19.

Isaiah 55:10-11

As the rain and the snow come down from heaven, and do not return to it without watering the earth and making it bud and flourish, so that it yields seed for the sower and bread for the eater, so is my word that goes out from my mouth: It will not return to me empty (Void, without producing any affect, useless), but will accomplish what I desire[Hope] and achieve the purpose for which I sent it.

Mark 4:26

Jesus said, "This is what the kingdom of God is like. A man scatters seed [Word spoken] on the ground [Human spirit]. Night and day, whether he sleeps or gets up, the seed sprouts and grows, though he does not know how. All by itself the soil [Spirit man] produces grain- first the stalk, then the head, then the full kernel in the head. As soon as the grain is ripe, he puts the sickle to it, because the harvest has come."

Let's look at Hebrews 11:3 in the KJV:

"Through Faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear."

The personal world we live in is framed and created by the words we speak over it!



When God looked at the dark empty expanse of the universe, He did not say what He saw, but what He wanted. When addressing a situation in our life, let's speak the end result, and not the temporal circumstance. Speak God's creative Word to the mountain of problems in life, and watch the mountain get out of the way. To speak what we see is to just re-enforce the problem in our life. People attempting to be honest and transparent will share their problems with others in order to get them off of their chest. In actuality, by speaking or praying the problem, we are exalting the circumstance above God's Word- 2 Corinthians 10:3. Instead, speak the victory we have over the problem according to the promise God has given us in His Word. We should avoid shooting ourselves in the foot by speaking words that work against us instead of for us. Remember, if we pray the problem instead of the answer, we will only have more faith in the problem, because faith comes by hearing words- Romans 10:10.

Genesis 1:1-3

In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. Now the earth was formless and empty, darkness was over the surface of the deep, and the Spirit of God was hovering over the waters. And God said, "Let there be light," and there was light.

Psalm 33:6, 9

By the word of the Lord, were the heavens made, their starry host by the breath of his mouth. For he spoke, and it came to be; he commanded, and it stood firm.

Notice what is being stated in Genesis, “*God Said.*” He created the heavens and the earth with faith filled words. Did you ever notice that when God said “*Let there be light*” it did not result in something else, like land being formed. Suppose the Bible said, “And God said, ‘Let there be light,’ and dry land was formed.” If we read that we would be confused as to what was going on. There is a principle here that God wants us to get a hold of.

What God spoke produced exactly what He said, something else did not happen. Therefore, we need to speak precisely what we want. The only way that something else could result is if we change our confession to something else. When God said, “*Let there be light,*” He never did say after that, “Light stop.” Scientists say that our universe is still expanding at the speed of light, and it will continue to expand for all eternity as far as we know. Jesus said it this way in Mark 13:31, “*Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will never pass away.*” Those words will never go unfulfilled.

When we speak God’s promises (His creative Word to change circumstances), let’s not undo what we said by saying something contrary. When we speak in faith, and the circumstance appears to be getting worse, the temptation comes to confess what we see. Unfortunately, if we do that, what we had said originally is replaced by the latest words we had just spoken. Our heart received new orders and is instructed to do something else (produce more of the problem), and the law of faith now endeavors to make the problem worse. This is where our lack of knowledge concerning these things hurt us.

When we pray one thing, and say another, our latest confession will nullify our praying. We need to learn to imitate our heavenly Father, and be single minded, and be true to our intent by being consistent in saying the same thing- this is critical in light of spiritual laws that are set in motion.

Isaiah 46:11

What I have said, that will I bring about; what I have planned, that will I do.

Numbers 23:19

God is not a man, that he should lie, nor a son of man, that he should change his mind. Does he speak and then not act? Does he promise and not fulfill?

Psalm 33:11

But the plans of the Lord stand firm forever, the purposes of his heart through all generations.

Don’t Let Double Talk Undo Your Faith!

When God gave dominion to Adam in the Garden, he was instructed by God to keep, and watch over it. God made Adam the god of this new world he had made. Adam had authority to name all the animals God had created. The important thing to consider about Adam's authority, is that first of all it was given to him from God. Secondly, this authority was expressed or exercised through words. Man is the only living creature on this earth who is a spirit being, and dominates through the use of words. If Adam had a problem in the garden, he was expected to release faith filled words to change things just like God did through the act of creation. Physically he would not be able to subdue the whole earth. He had to do it by faith, and through the power of words.



Genesis 1:26-28

Then God said, “Let us make man in our image, in our likeness, and let them rule over the fish of the sea and the birds of the air, over the livestock, over all the earth, and over all the creatures that move along the ground.” So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him; male and female he created them. God blessed them and said to them, “Be fruitful and increase in number; fill the earth and subdue it. Rule over the fish of the sea and the birds of the air and over every living creature that moves on the ground.”

As believers today we have been authorized by Jesus to use His Name, and dominate the devil and the kingdom of darkness- *“I have given you authority to trample on snakes and scorpions and to overcome all the power of the enemy; nothing will harm you”* (Luke 10:19), you can also refer to these Scriptures as well- Matthew 28:18-19; Mark 16:17-18.

Jesus has given us the keys of the kingdom, the authority to bind and loose on earth concerning those things that are already bound or loosed in heaven. In the margin of my Amplified Bible is states, “Williams: Perfect passive participle, so things in a state of having been already forbidden [or permitted].” This states that there are guidelines to what we bind and loose on earth. Some people have gone wild and tried to bind and loose things that were way off base. To put it simply, if it is bound in heaven where God is, then we have the authority to bind that evil from operating on the earth. Sickness, disease, poverty, confusion, and everything else that is of the devil is not allowed in heaven, so we have the authority to bind it from operating here on the earth. The flip side is also true in that things that are permitted in heaven, healing, life, love, prosperity, peace, and everything else of God can be loosed through us on the earth in Jesus' Name.

Matthew 16:19 (AMP)

“I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven; and whatever you bind- that is declare to be improper and unlawful- on earth must be already bound in heaven; and whatever you loose on earth-declare lawful-must be what is already loosed in heaven.”

How is this authority released or enforced in the earth? By speaking God's faith filled WORD! When we exercise authority over sickness or casting a demon out of someone, we speak the Name of Jesus- WORDS! When overcoming temptation, and the attacks of the enemy, we resist the devil by speaking God's Word. We release our spiritual authority on the earth through spoken words- Matthew 8:26.

Point #2- Not Made Out Of What Was Visible

Hebrews 11:3

By faith we understand that the universe was formed at God's command, so that what is seen was not made out of what was visible.

Words are unseen to the five senses but they are real. We cannot see electricity, but it has power to bless or destroy. We cannot see atoms but they are the building blocks of the universe. As human beings we get so hung up on seeing it first before we believe it. But there are a lot of things we cannot see, but we see the affect they have on us, and the world we live in. Concerning the new birth, Jesus had to explain spiritual concepts to a natural minded man.

Mark 3:1-12

Now there was a man of the Pharisees named Nicodemus, a member of the Jewish ruling council. He came to Jesus at night and said, "Rabbi, we know you are a teacher who has come from God. For no one could perform the miraculous signs you are doing if God were not with him." In reply Jesus declared, "I tell you the truth, unless a man is born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God."

"How can a man be born when he is old?" Nicodemus asked, "Surely he cannot enter a second time into his mother's womb to be born!" Jesus answered, "I tell you the truth, unless a man is born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God. Flesh gives birth to flesh, but he Spirit gives birth to spirit. You should not be surprised at my saying, 'You must be born again.' The wind blows wherever it pleases. You hear its sound, but you cannot tell where it comes from or where it is going. So it is with everyone born of the Spirit."

"How can this be?" Nicodemus asked. "You are Israel's teacher," said Jesus, "and do you not understand these things?" I tell you the truth, we speak of what we know, and we testify to what we have seen, but still you people do not accept our testimony. *I have spoken to you of earthly things and you do not believe; how then will you believe if I speak of heavenly things?"*

Here Jesus engaged in a conversation with a spiritual leader, and shares a spiritual truth concerning the new birth. As we have just read, this man tried to comprehend it with his natural mind. The natural mind is dependent upon the five senses to feed it data from the natural world in order to make judgments on things. Here is a perfect example of what happens when a spiritual truth is processed by the natural mind- CONFUSION! Yet Jesus pointed out to him that one cannot see the wind, but we can tell it's there by the affect it has on what it touches. Spiritual things are the same way, we can't see, taste, touch, hear or smell words, faith, hope, love, or God, but we can experience the affect they have on our lives and in this world. They are just as real as rocks, trees and people. Actually spiritual things are more real, because they always existed and always will.

1 Corinthians 2: 9-10, 13

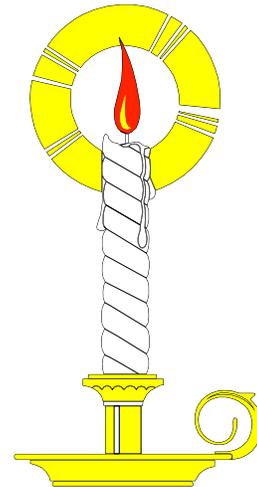
However, as it is written: "No eye has seen, no ear has heard, no mind has conceived what God has prepared for those who love him" But God has revealed it to us by his Spirit. The Spirit searches all things, even the deep things of God. This is what we speak, not in words taught us by human wisdom but in words taught by the Spirit, expressing spiritual truths in spiritual words. The man without the Spirit does not accept the things that come from the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness to him, and he cannot understand them, because they are spiritually discerned.

Here is an explanation of why Nicodemus could not understand what Jesus was sharing. He was a natural man without the Spirit to reveal the spiritual truth that Jesus spoke about. The Lord's words seemed foolish to him, because they are spiritually discerned to be understood. Don't be surprised if unbelievers or even some Christians say, "This faith and confession stuff is for the birds." They cannot appreciate it, because they do not understand it. Yet they operate these same spiritual laws they don't believe in, and destroy their lives with negative words and blame God for it Proverbs.19:3, "*A man's own folly ruins his life, yet his heart rages against the Lord.*" Another classic example of what ignorance does to people, is that it makes them vulnerable to destruction.

Words are unseen forces that release our faith, just as electrons are unseen forces that make up electricity. They are unseen, but very real, they are governed by laws, and show no favoritism. If used according to knowledge, they will produce for us the things desired. However, if they are abused, even out of ignorance, they can kill and destroy.

People who play with spiritual things will get burned. We have always told our children as they grew up, "Don't play with matches, you'll get burned or you will burn the house down." I have personally seen the effects of fires created by children as they burned homes and fields. Words are very real, they are spiritual forces that give substance to everything we see.

Speaking God's words releases our faith to bring into reality the beautiful, and wonderful things that we hope for.



For many of us, it was years before we were enlightened concerning these spiritual laws that affect our lives. Now that we know more about them, we can study the Bible even more, and harness them for our good and God's glory. We should not be discouraged if we don't learn to operate in these principles overnight, it takes time to renew our minds with the Word in order to be consistent with our speech. The Holy Spirit will be our coach, to train us in this life to walk by faith, and to talk like our Father does. If we think all this confession business is for God only, think again. Jesus said, "*Be perfect, therefore, as your heavenly Father is perfect*" in Matthew 5:48, and "*I tell you the truth, anyone who has faith in me will do what I have been doing. He will do even greater things than these, because I am going to the Father.*" Consider 1 John 2:6 which says, "*Whoever claims to live in him must walk as Jesus did.*"

It's the Father's will for us to speak His words after Him, and thus manifest His kingdom in the earth. When Jesus taught His disciples how to pray in Matthew 6:9-13 He said, "*Our Father in heaven, hallowed be your name, your kingdom come, your will be done on earth as it is in heaven.*" I believe this is accomplished through speaking, and acting on God's Word. We know that God's Word is His will, and when we speak it in faith, His kingdom manifests on the earth in the form of salvation, healing, deliverance, love and so on. Words are powerful when released out of our mouth, because they carry spiritual forces:

John 6:63- Jesus said that His words were full of a substance called, "Spirit Life"

Acts 20:32- Paul says that God's Word is full of a substance called, "Grace"

Romans 10:10- Paul also says that God's Word is full of a substance called, "Faith"

Words are spiritual forces that carry, and transport faith or fear, love or hate. What is in our heart will fill the words we speak, and produce what is contained in those words- *“For out of the fullness, the overflow, the superabundance of the heart the mouth speaks”* according to Matthew 12:34. Whenever Jesus spoke, His words contained spiritual life, because that is what He is full of- *“God has given us eternal life, and this life is in his Son”* 1 John 5:11.

When the devil speaks, his words are full of spiritual death. Before Jesus incarnation, the Bible refers to Him as, “The Word,” in the book of Revelation, He is still referred to as, “The Word Of God” in Revelation 19:13. This spiritual concept is understood as the Spirit reveals it to us- the second person of the Godhead (Jesus) is God’s Word. Jesus is the express will, and spoken Word of the Father. That is why Scripture says the universe was created from the Father **through** the Son, through God’s spoken WORD (Jesus)- Colossians 1:15-16; Hebrews 1:2; 1 Corinthians 8:6; Romans 11:36.

John 1:1-4

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made. In him was life, and that life was the light of men.

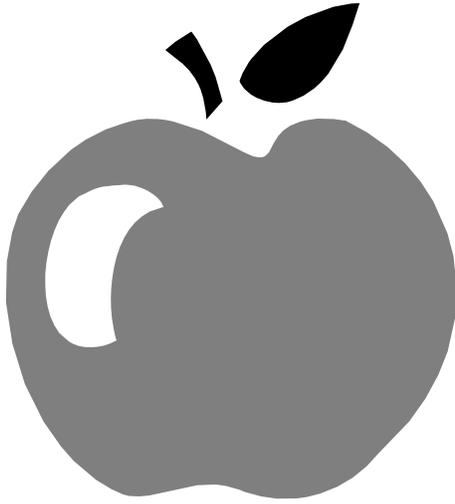
We have shared before in previous sections that God’s Word is a living force, *“For the Word of God is living and active.”* Of course it is, because the Word of God is a person, the Second Person of the trinity. Man’s words that are originated by himself are empty, *“Let no one deceive you with empty words”* (Ephesians 5:6), and *“For their mouth empty, boastful words...”* in 2 Peter 2:18. If Jesus is full of spirit life, grace, and truth, then so are His words. When we take those words, and put them in our mouths, they will release those very same substances in our spirit, and manifest His glory and provision in our lives as well.

John 1:14, 16-17

The Word became flesh and lived for a while among us. We have seen his glory, the glory of the one and only Son, who came from the Father, full of grace and truth. From the fullness of his grace we have all received one blessing after another. For the law was given through Moses; grace and truth came through Jesus Christ.

Words Are Containers Of The Spiritual Substance Within The Heart Of The Person Who Speaks Them!

Since words are containers, hearing God’s Word produces faith. The same principle of words is true when we hear the words of the devil. Since words are containers, hearing the devil’s words produces fear, and results in death if believed and acted upon. His words are full of deadly poison, that is one reason why the Bible refers to him as a poisonous serpent. Whoever embraces, and speaks his words embraces death. As free moral agents, we have a free will to choose whose words we will speak. Before we make our decision, we must realize that we will experience in our life the substance that is found in those words that we speak.



The Lord God took man and put him in the Garden of Eden to work it and take care of it. And the Lord God commanded the man, “You are free to eat from any tree in the garden; but you must not eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, for when you eat of it you will surely die.”

Now the serpent was more crafty than any of the wild animals the Lord God had made. He said to the woman, “Did God really say, ‘You must not eat from any tree in the garden?’” The Woman said to the serpent, “We may eat fruit from the trees in the garden, but God did say ‘You must not eat fruit from the tree that is in the middle of the garden, and you must not touch it, or you will die.’ ”
“You will not surely die,” the serpent said to the woman.

Genesis 2:15-17; 3:1-4

Since words will form and shape our life, let’s be aware of what we read, hear and say. Don’t be like a baby bird that just swallows everything that comes around. We must be like the Bereans who examined everything Paul preached to them in the light of God’s Word- Acts 17:11. Anything that contradicts Scripture is not of God, and is to be avoided - they are deadly words that can shipwreck our faith- 1 Timothy 6:20-21. The greatest threat to the early Church was not persecution (which only fanned the flame Acts 8:1-12), but false teaching- Galatians 1:6-9; 5:7-12; Titus 1:10-11.

Mark 4:24-25

Jesus said, “**Consider carefully what you hear,**” he continued. “With the measure you use, it will be measured to you- and even more. **Whoever has will be given more; whoever does not have, even what he has will be taken from him.**”

When we talk about the subject of confession, all I am saying is to agree with what God has already said in His Word. A person is in error if they fabricate a promise from God that does not exist in the Bible. Faith and confession says, “Take God’s Word and put it in your mouth until it gets in your heart. Next, speak it out of your mouth in order to release the spirit life force of faith that will produce in your life the fruit of God’s kingdom that is already within you” according to Romans 10:9; Luke 17:21.

2. The Law of Genesis

The law of Genesis was established by God as a fixed law from the very beginning of creation. This law operates in the spiritual realm as well as the natural. The law of Genesis is this, “*Everything produces after its own kind, and the seed is in itself.*” It works this way all the time; it’s an absolute law.

Genesis 1:11-12, 29

Then God said, “Let the land produce vegetation: seed-bearing plants and trees on the land that bear fruit with seed in it, according to their various kinds.” And it was so. The land produced vegetation; **plants bearing seed according to their kinds** and trees bearing **fruit with seed in it** according to their kinds. And God saw that it was good. Then God said to man, “I give you every seed-bearing plant on the face of the whole earth and every tree that has fruit with seed in it.”

If we take vegetables for example, the seed to produce more vegetables is found in the vegetable itself. In the act of creation, God made the vegetable first with seed in it in order to perpetuate it from then on. Therefore the age old question of , “which came first, the chicken or the egg” is already answered by the Bible- the chicken, carrot, flower, tree, animal, fish, and the man came first. Within God’s creation was the seed to re-produce itself from then on, and forever. Jesus explained in the parable of the sower that God’s Word is spiritual seed, “*The seed is the Word of God*” in Luke 8:11. The ground that Jesus refers to is the human spirit, “*But the seed on good soil stands for those with a noble and good heart, who hear the word, retain it, and by persevering produce a crop*” in Luke 8:15. From this spiritual principle we can see that all words are seeds of one kind or another. The words we speak are seeds being sown in the hearts of the hearers.

Remember, everything produces after its own kind and the seed is in itself. The seed of strife is in strife itself. If we get in strife with someone by speaking strife filled words, it will create more strife- “*Starting a quarrel is like breaching a dam; so drop the matter before a dispute breaks out.*” If we give love, we will reap love. The seed is in itself to produce more. Remember how we talked about words being containers. Since words are spoken out of the abundance of a man’s heart, whatever is in his heart will fill his words when they are spoken. Those words will produce more of what we spoke in our lives, and in the lives of others- either good or bad. If someone speaks a curse over you, as a Christian you can counter act those words, and destroy them with God’s Word- Hebrews 4:12 says that God’s Word is, “*sharper than any double-edged sword.*”

God didn’t give us the Word to put us in bondage. Some people have said about faith and confession, “This confession teaching just puts me in bondage. I can’t say anything anymore, because I have to watch what I’m saying.” Isn’t it sad that we can go on a diet and watch our fat and cholesterol intake and think nothing of it. We understand if we are going to live long and healthy lives naturally we must watch what we eat. Yet people are putting themselves, and others in the grave at a early age by speaking death over themselves and others- “I know it’s going to kill me but I love cheese cake”, “I told him that riding a motor bike is dangerous, you just watch, he will kill himself someday.” When we continually speak negatively, it’s going to cause us problems. Our confession either releases God or the devil on the scene to carry out what we say- words grant access and releases authority.

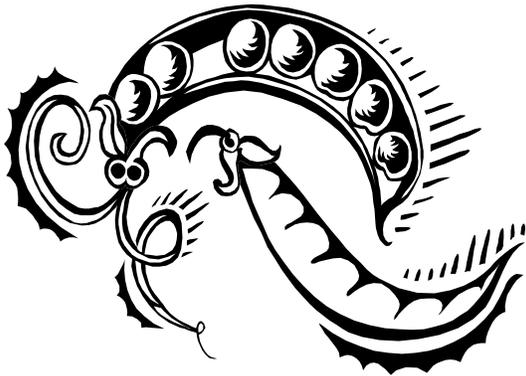
We need to check on the seed that is in our mouth before we sow it, especially in prayer. Sometimes people pray the problem instead of the answer. If we pray the problem in prayer, we then have more faith in the problem, because faith comes by hearing audible words. We can destroy our faith in God through prayer, when we pray the problem. We must learn to incorporate God’s promises that address our specific needs in our prayers. We need to control the words that come out of our mouths, because God answers the prayer of faith according to James 5:15, “*And the prayer offered in faith will make the sick person well.*” The prayer of faith is simply a prayer based on, and incorporates God’s Word. When we pray the answer, the fulfillment of the promise, we will be planting seed for the right harvest.

If we wanted to plant a garden, and in that garden we wanted to plant some corn. What would we need in order to plant corn? Corn seed of course! We can’t take carrot seeds and plant them, and expect to receive a harvest of corn. The Bible contains all the seed of God’s promises and provision for every area of our life. But to meet a specific need, we need to get the specific seed to meet that need. If our body is in need of physical healing, let’s find healing Scriptures, and plant them in our heart through faith principles. That healing seed will grow in our heart, and materialize in time. If we need more of God’s peace in our life, let’s not focus our time and energy on planting sanctification seed. It’s the same as planting carrot seed, and expecting corn to appear. Sow the type of seed to meet the specific need- we must plant before we receive, it’s just that simple.

We Need To Check On The Seed We Are Sowing

A) Faith As A Seed- The Act Of Sowing

Before we have a harvest of any kind, natural or spiritual, we must have a season for sowing the seed. Depending on what type of seed we sow will determine the kind of harvest we will reap. The principle of seed time and harvest is an unchangeable law that is recorded in the book of Genesis. It has been working for, and against mankind from the beginning of creation. When I say against, I mean they have sown bad seed, and reaped a bad harvest in their life- no fault on the principle.



“Never again will I destroy all living creatures, as I have done. As long as the earth endures, seed time and harvest, cold and heat, summer and winter, day and night will never cease.”

Genesis 8:22

Do not be deceived: God cannot be mocked. A man reaps what he sows.

Galatians 6:7

Let's look at the ministry of giving and receiving in the Bible. Paul complimented the Philippian believers for their obedience to God's Word concerning giving in Philippians 4:19, *“Moreover, as you Philippians know, in the early days of your acquaintance with the gospel, when I set out from Macedonia, not one church shared with me in the matter of giving and receiving, except you only.”* (Philippians 4:15). Since they put this law of sowing and reaping in effect, Paul could further say, *“And my God will meet your needs according to his glorious riches in Christ Jesus.”* These believers sowed financial seed, and the Holy Spirit through Paul promised them that they would reap a financial harvest.

It is ludicrous for us to think that we can expect a harvest without first sowing some seed. Here is an important question to ask, “How does God meet our needs in life?” He has already established provision for us through this law of sowing and reaping. It has always worked for us in the natural, and likewise, anything we need in the spiritual works the same way.

2 Peter 1:3-4

His divine power has given us everything we need for life and godliness through our knowledge of him who called us by his own glory and goodness. Through these he has given us his very great and precious promises, so that through them you may participate in the divine nature and escape the corruption in the world caused by evil desires.

Jesus said in Luke 17:20-21, *“Once, having been asked by the Pharisees when the kingdom of God would come, Jesus replied, the kingdom of God does not come visibly, nor will people say, ‘Here it is,’ or ‘There it is,’ because the kingdom of God is within you.”* That is where faith works, in our spirit. The kingdom of God is in our spirit, that is the ground in which the seed of God’s Word is sown. The spirit of man is the production center for God’s Kingdom. Find the promises in God’s Word that covers the need, and begin sowing them in your heart.

In God’s economy, our needs are not met by the magic wand method of, “Puff” here is our new car, or “Puff” we are now strong in our love walk. God always takes what we have sown and multiplies it. In the story of the widow at Zarephath God performed a miracle through Elijah. She gave the prophet of God the rest of her flour, and oil during a famine and God multiplied it to feed them until the famine was over- 1 Kings 17:7-16. In another story, there was another widow woman who owed a debt to some creditors. Elisha told her take the little oil she had, and begin filling empty jars with it until she ran out of jars to fill- 2 Kings 4:1-7. We sow the seed and God gives the increase to meet the need- Jesus multiplied the fish and loaves of bread in Luke 9:10-17. So God meets all our needs by multiplying the seed we sow. Our salvation, healing, peace, and prosperity harvest is produced by sowing salvation, healing, peace, and prosperity seed found in the Bible.

One may ask, “Now I know what the seed is, but how do I sow it?”

Mark 4:26

Jesus said, “This is what the kingdom of God is like. A man scatters seed [Word spoken] on the ground [Human spirit]. Night and day, whether he sleeps or gets up, the seed sprouts and grows, though he does not know how. All by itself the soil [Spirit man] produces grain- first the stalk, then the head, then the full kernel in the head. As soon as the grain is ripe, he puts the sickle to it, because the harvest has come.”

We are the ones who are responsible for sowing the seed. The seed is sown in our hearts when we speak the promise out of our mouths- and there it begins to grow and produce. Sometimes people think it’s going to happen just because they say it. Saying is involved in planting it. But it won’t necessarily happen just because we say it. People will run off with Mark 11:23 and push things to extreme. It won’t work just because we say it. But saying it is involved in working it. It’s like saying to a farmer about farming, “You won’t necessarily have a harvest just because you plant. But you will never have a harvest if you don’t plant.” There is also a process of caring for that seed after it is planted, that is just as important as planting the seed. The problem has been that people just plant a few seeds, and go off and leave them. We must care for that seed. It takes time for it to go through the different stages of development and manifest. We will cover this process of caring for the seed in more detail later on in this book.

1 Corinthians 3:6- I planted the seed, Apollos watered it, but God made it grow.

When we talk about the power of words, we are talking about the power of seeds. It is the life in that seed that the farmer is planting that will produce a harvest. God’s Word is incorruptible seed according to 1 Peter 1:23, it is full of His life and grace to re-produce itself in our life. God’s promises are seeds for a harvest, and we sow it by speaking it- the sowing is in the saying. We have been taught that we should, “tell it like it is.” However, that is not the Bible way. The Bible method is that we say it the way the Word of God says it. When we see lack and problems in our life, speak abundance and peace. That is how God would handle it, but He is not going to do it for us. We have the resources, and the tools to seed for a harvest- it’s now up to us to just do it.

Luke 17:5

Jesus replied, “If you have faith as small as a mustard seed, you can **say** to this mulberry tree, ‘Be uprooted and planted in the sea,’ and it will obey you.”

Mark 11:22-23

“Have faith in God,” Jesus answered. “I tell you the truth, if anyone **says** to this mountain, ‘Go, throw yourself into the sea,’ and does not doubt in his heart but believes that what he **says** will happen, it will be done for him(KJV- he will have whatsoever he **saith**).”

There is no faith without confession. In order to release our faith, we must speak God’s faith filled words. Notice that Jesus said in the Scriptures above, that we are the ones who speak to the obstacles in life and say “It is written, so get out of my way.” Jesus went on to say that the problem would **obey you**. The Apostles thought they needed more faith when all they needed was a lesson from Jesus on how faith works. The primary principle to faith working in our lives is that it involves speaking God’s Word to the problem. Faith works like a seed, unless we plant it, we won’t have a harvest. Often times this is our problem, we don’t operate “faith as a seed.”

Faith Operates As A Seed

Some Christians have what I call passive faith, they believe the Bible from cover to cover, but never seed it to produce a harvest. They believe if it’s God’s will it will happen to them automatically. In other words they put all the responsibility on God to meet their needs while they sit on their spiritual sofa. They will pray, “Lord if it be thy will please meet our needs.” Then when their need is not met they say, “Well, I guess it just was not God’s will for us to have our needs met. His sovereign ways are above ours, I guess He is using poverty to make us more humble like Job.” God’s Word is God’s will. Just as it was with the Israelites, so it will be with us in the New Covenant. They had a Promised Land to possess, but they had to get up, and go in and possess it. We must learn to fight the fight of faith, and lay claim to our rights and privileges in Christ. Yes, there will be some giants of doubt, unbelief, and obstacles to overcome, but through persistence we will eat the good of the land.

The Word of God is the will of God. God’s will, won’t happen in our life just because it’s God’s will. We will not be healed just because the Bible says, “*By his stripes you were healed*” in 1 Peter 2:24. We will not become prosperous just because the Bible says, “*My God shall supply all your needs...*” according to Philippians 4:19. It requires faith, which activates the Word in order to produce a harvest. The Word produces when it is planted in our hearts through Bible meditation- speaking and muttering the Word, Joshua 1:8-9. We can’t take a Bible down to the hospital and lay it on someone to get them healed, even though the Bible is God speaking to us. But if we can get that Word inside of the sick, it will manifest itself and heal them- “*He sent forth his word and healed them...*” Psalms 107:20 and in Proverbs 4:20-22, “*My son, pay attention to what I say; listen closely to my words. Do not let them out of your sight, keep them within your heart; for they are life to those who find them and health to a man’s whole body.”*

Jesus said to the Apostles, “If you had **faith as a seed**, you would say to the sycamore tree.” Another paraphrase of this verse would be, “*It would obey your faith-filled words, if you had faith as a seed.*” Jesus tells us two great faith secrets here; faith is as a seed, or it works as a seed, and we plant it by speaking it. Speak God’s Word to those problem areas in life.

Faith Works As A Seed And You Plant It By Speaking It!

B) The Law Of Increase

Whatever seed we sow, God will multiply it many times back to us. As mentioned by Jesus in the parable of the sower, we can expect a 30, 60, 100 fold return on our seed. God wants His children to live in abundance, to have a fully supply in every area of life. This is accomplished by taking the seed of God's Word, and sowing it into every area of need. God's super abundance will overtake, and fill those areas with His bountiful increase.



“Give, and it will be given to you. A good measure, pressed down, shaken together and running over, will be poured into your lap. For with the measure you use, it will be measured to you.”

Luke 6:38

What good would it do if the seed a farmer sowed produced the same amount of fruit as the seed that was planted. He would go out of business in a hurry. When a farmer sows, he can expect a multiplied harvest. The multiplication factor depends on his skill as a farmer. He can either receive a good harvest or a super harvest. The same is true for us as Christians, as we mature in these principles, we can expect the size of our harvests to increase as well. Jesus explains the law of increase with the following verse.

John 12:23-24

The Hour has come for the Son of Man to be glorified. I tell you the truth, unless a kernel of wheat falls to the ground and dies, it remains only a single seed. But if it dies, it produces many seeds.

The law of increase is best illustrated by how it works with prosperity. Just as words are seeds, so is giving of our time, talents, and money. Some people, when they hear the word prosperity, television evangelists immediately come to their mind. The law of increase and prosperity was instituted by God in Genesis. Sure, some of them may be using legitimate Bible principles for unholy uses, but that does not diminish the spiritual law. We'll just say in our case that we will use these principles to further God's Kingdom. We can't be a blessing unless we're blessed. Nor can we give what we don't have. Just because some people choose to drink and drive, are we going to stop driving a car- NO!

One man gives freely, yet gains even more; another withholds unduly, but comes to poverty. A generous man will prosper; he who refreshes others will himself be refreshed.

Proverbs 11:24-25



2 Corinthians 9:6, 10-11

Remember this: Whoever sows sparingly will also reap sparingly, and whoever sows generously will also reap generously. Now he who supplies seed to the sower and bread for food will also supply and increase your store of seed and will enlarge the harvest of your righteousness. You will be made rich in every way so that you can be generous on every occasion, and through us your generosity will result in thanksgiving to God.

Malachi 3:10-12

“Bring the whole tithe into the storehouse, that there may be food in my house. Test me in this,” says the Lord Almighty, “and see if I will not throw open the floodgates of heaven and pour out so much blessing that you will not have room enough for it. I will prevent pests from devouring your crops, and the vines in your fields will not cast their fruit,” says the Lord Almighty. “Then all the nations will call you blessed, for yours will be a delightful land,” says the Lord Almighty.

3. The Dynamic Kernels

In conclusion, I would like to share an incredible illustration that I found from “Believe It Or Not” by Ripley. It will illustrate the law of increase for us. This principle has been so powerful for humanity when we worked it in the natural, just imagine how powerful it is going to be for us when we use the Word of God as our incorruptible seed. The harvest will just blow us away. Instead of just reaping wheat, rice and cotton, we will start reaping new births, healings, prosperity, peace, love, and joy!

Perry Hayden- Tecumseh Michigan: Inspired by a Biblical quotation found in **John 12:24**. He began an experiment of sowing and reaping in connection with tithing. His plan was to begin by sowing 1 cubic inches of wheat, and after tithing from the harvest to sow the entire 90% back into the ground. This was to continue for 6 years.

John planted a cubic inch of wheat in 1940 and in 1946 the harvest was 75,000 bushels of wheat valued at \$150,000.00. That was in 1946, can you imagine how much that would be worth today?

1st Year- Sowed 1 cubic inch [360 Kernels] on a 4” x 8’ plot of ground.
[1 bushel = 2,150 cubic inch] @ \$4 per bushel, 1cubic inch=\$0.0018

Harvest was 50 cu. in. or 0.023 bushel = 9 cents- 50 fold. Tithe was 5 cu. in.=\$0.009
Extra effort was made to save every kernel.

2nd Year- Sowed 45 cubic inch of seed in a 24” x 60” plot

Harvest was 70 lb. / 1.16 bushel = \$4.64 Tithe = 7lbs. Tithe = 7 lbs. = \$0.46
[Already 1 cu. in. Has turned into 2,494 cu. in. 360 kernels have turned into 881, 499 kernels]

3rd Year- Sowed 63 lb. in 0.77 acres

Harvested 1,010 lb. = 16 bushel / 34,400 cu. in. \$64.00 / Tithe = 101 Lbs. = \$6.40

This was a bad harvest. The local average was 24 bu. per acre. Too much rain coupled with birds, and a horse eating some of the crop caused the loss. It is estimated that every bushel that was lost from this crop resulted in a loss of 4,375 bushels 4 years later.

- 4th Year-** Sowed 861 lb. / 14.3 bushels [after cleaning] on 14 acres
 [27.1 bushels Per acre- 8 bushels per acre better than average]
 Harvested 22,765 lbs / 380 bu.= \$1,520 [817,000 cu. in.] Tithe- 37 bu.[after cleaning]
 \$148.00
- 5th Year-** Sowed 321 bu. on 230 acres
 Harvested 5,555 bu. \$22,220.00. Tithe was 555 bu. [\$2,220.00]
- 6th Year-** Sowed 5,000 bu. on 2,666 acres
 Harvested 72,150 bu. = \$288,600.00. Tithe \$28,860 [360 kernels became 55 Billion]

At the end of this experiment it was calculated that if the average farmer in the area had done the same experiment, continually re-sowing 100% rather than 90% [After tithing] and at a high yield of 30 bu. Per acre the sixth harvest would have been 5,297 bushels. But with tithing Mr. Hayden's harvest was 72,150 bushels which is 13.5 times greater.

State averages would have been: [In cubic inches] 100% sown

$$1 / 15 / 225 / 3,375 / 50,625 / 759,375 / 11,390,625 = [5,297 \text{ bu.}]$$

$$\$0.00 \text{ Given} = \$21,188.00 \text{ Gained}$$

The dynamic kernels harvests were: 10% Tithes : 90% sown

$$1 / 50 / 2,494 / 34,400 / 817,000 / 11,943,250 / 155,122,500$$

[72,150 bushels]

$$\$31,235 \text{ Given} = \$288,600 \text{ Gained}$$

John 12:23-24

The Hour has come for the Son of Man to be glorified. I tell you the truth, unless a kernel of wheat falls to the ground and dies, it remains only a single seed. But if it dies, it produces many seeds.

You Can't Out Give God!

Unit 7 Review:

What is meant by words being a “Creative Force” and how does that apply to the believer?

Why are words so important to the principles of Faith?

If words are containers, what do they contain and why is that significant?

What is the “Law of Genesis?”

If “Faith operates as a Seed,” what are the implications and applications of that statement?

Explain the “Law of Increase”?

III. The Law of Faith



Mark 11:22-24

“Have faith in God,” Jesus answered. “I tell you the truth, if anyone says to this mountain, ‘Go, throw yourself into the sea,’ and does not doubt in his heart but believes that what he says will happen, it will be done for him. Therefore, I tell you whatever you ask for in prayer, believe that you have received it, and it will be yours.”

Objectives:

- Provide the believer with the essential Biblical background and principles concerning Faith.
- Build excitement in God’s possibilities for His children to enter into their Promised Land!
- Point out areas of excess, pitfalls and misnomers that have lead Christians into ditches.

This lesson will bring forth revelation from God’s Word that will equip us with the keys of the kingdom. These keys of faith will unlock God’s possibilities in any impossible situation.

Romans 3:27 (KJV)

Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith.

God says what He means and means what He says, so I challenge you by the authority of God’s Word to be opened minded with a heart to receive what Scripture and the Spirit of God will reveal to you. Expect God’s Word to cause you to stretch and grow. Be prepared to walk on the water of circumstances by faith and walk in the realm of the miraculous. God is a faith God and He expects us to learn how to walk by faith. I believe that this lesson will equip you with fundamental concepts concerning faith.

The way in which God created and ordered our natural world is the way in which the spiritual realm operates. The physical realm is established upon natural laws that govern the operation of this physical universe. There are rules and principles of science that man is discovering every day in order to harness our natural resources to produce good things for mankind.

When man discovered the law of electricity, it did not mean that the principles of electricity all of a sudden came into being. They were operating since the beginning of creation. In other words, the light bulb, computers, electric appliances could have been invented thousands of years ago. There are still unlimited uses for it yet to be discovered. However, discovery does not create the law, but harnesses it for a particular use. The law of faith has been in existence for all eternity past. Through God’s Word we will discover its operation and use in order to harness, and produce our inheritance in Christ on the earth, and in our lives. For we are blessed to be a blessing, this is our destiny.

Some essential truths are illustrated in Romans 3:1-4, for all of us to take note of. Just because folks fail to enter into God’s best for their lives does not nullify, discount or disqualify God’s best for everyone. One of the greatest dangers facing Christians today is basing personal experience above doctrine and plain truth in God’s Word- whether it be personal or someone else’s personal experiences.

Just because we become aware of a wonderful godly Christian who died prematurely of cancer does not mean God's Word failed. God is not schizophrenic, He does not change spiritual laws arbitrarily, He is not sovereign to the extent that He violates His own Word. Since God has emphatically declared that "By his stripes you were healed" in 1 Peter 2:24, this redemptive reality is available to all, but not all will be healed just as not all will be saved. If people die and go to hell is that God's fault, did God's Word fail? Of course not! Neither is it God's will for us to be sick in our bodies. There is always a reason why bad things happen to God's children, but not because it was God's will. Why? The Bible teaches that Jesus came that we might have life and have it more abundantly- John 10:10! Sure trials, tests, temptations and persecutions come to every believer, but they are from the devil, not God. Through the promises of God we overcome what the devil meant for evil and God turns it around for our good- Romans 8:28.

Romans 3:1-4

What advantage, then, is there in being a Jew, or what value is there in circumcision? Much in every way! First of all, they have been entrusted with the very words of God. What if some did not have faith? Will their lack of faith nullify God's faithfulness? Not at all! Let God be true, and every man a liar. As it is written: "So that you may be proved right when you speak and prevail when you judge."

A. Introduction to Faith

1. What Is Faith?

Hebrews 11:1

Now faith is being sure of what we hope for and certain of what we do not see.

Hebrews 11:1 (AMP)

Now faith is the assurance (the confirmation, the title-deed) of things [we] hope for, being the proof of things [we] do not see and the conviction of their reality- faith perceiving as real fact what is not revealed to the senses.

Hebrews 11:1-2 (NKJV)

Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.

Faith Is: Sure, Substance, Assurance, Confirmation, Title Deed, Certainty, Proof of Things, Conviction of their Reality, Perceiving as Real Fact, The Evidence!

Before we actually discuss the spiritual principles of faith, I believe that it would benefit our discussion on this subject if we look at the Biblical usage of this word. For example, the Bible refers to, "The Faith", and just "Faith." Let's look at the difference between the two. The casual reader may become confused when they read these two uses of faith, but they mean two different things.

The Faith: It is interesting to note that this phrase is first found in the book of Acts in the KJV of the Bible. This is significant, because the use of faith in this context is referring to a system of beliefs by a group of people- The Christian faith. Has anybody ever come to you and asked, "What faith do you belong to?" This person wants to know which religion you adhere to. This particular usage of "Faith", in this context is being used as a noun that describes a group of people.

Acts 6:7 KJV

And the word of God increased; and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly; and a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith.

1 Timothy 4:1 NIV

The Spirit clearly says that in later times some will abandon the faith and follow deceiving spirits and things taught by demons.

The word, “believers” is another term that even more specifically refers to a group of people who adhere to, and practice a particular religion. In our case of course, we are speaking of Christianity.

Acts 5:12 NIV

The apostles performed many miraculous signs and wonders among the people. And all the believers used to meet together in Solomon's Colonnade.

Faith: Let’s look at the use of this word in Biblical text as a verb- an action word. Faith in its very core is an action. This word is basically used in every book of the New Testament. For our purposes, in this book we will be studying this particular use of the word; the Biblical operation of the law of faith. The simple implementation of the spiritual laws, and principles of faith.

Matthew 17:20 NIV

He replied, “because you have so little faith. I tell you the truth, if you have faith as small as a mustard seed, you can say to this mountain, ‘Move from here to there’ and it will move. Nothing will be impossible for you.”

The word, “believe” denotes an action or implementation of the principles of faith.

Mark 16:17- And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons; they will speak in new tongues...

In conclusion, we have seen that, “the Faith” and “Believers” refers to a group of people who have embraced a doctrine of beliefs. We have also seen that, “Faith” and “Believe” are used in connection with exercising spiritual principles that cause the recipient to receive provision from God to meet a particular need. These words come from the same basic Greek word in the Strong’s Greek Concordance:

Faith:

4102. pistis, pis'-tis; from G3982; persuasion, i.e. credence; mor. conviction (of religious truth, or the truthfulness of God or a religious teacher), espec. reliance upon Christ for salvation; abstr. constancy in such profession; by extens. the system of religious (Gospel) truth itself:--assurance, belief, believe, faith, fidelity.

Believe:

4100. pisteuo, pist-yoo'-o; from G4102; to have faith (in, upon, or with respect to, a person or thing), i.e. credit; by impl. to entrust (espec. one's spiritual well-being to Christ):--believe (-r), commit (to trust), put in trust with.

	The Old Testament		The New Testament	
	NIV	KJV	NIV	KJV
The Faith	0	0	34	43
Faith	16	2	254	245
Believers	0	0	21	2
Believe	21	19	139	124

Now that we have made a distinction between the usage of the word, “Faith” we can now begin to analyze the specific use of faith in the context of spiritual principles. Let’s explore, and actually compose a Biblical definition for faith. Of course the number one Scripture in the Bible that best defines faith is found in Hebrews 11:1. Moffatt’s translation reads, *“Now faith means that we are confident of what we hope for, convinced of what we do not see.”* Another translation reads, *“Faith is giving substance to things we hoped for.”* Here’s another translation, *“Faith is the warranty deed, the thing for which we have finally hoped for is at last ours.”*

Hebrews 11:1 (KJV)

Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.

I have created a conglomeration of terms from other translations for Hebrews 11:1, and synonyms for these words. Below are the definitions for all these words. The purpose of defining these words is to paint a spiritual portrait of what faith is. These definitions come from, “The New Shorter Oxford English Dictionary”- Clarendon Press, Oxford.

Now faith is the substance (confirmation, title deed, confidence, assurance, being sure) of what we hope for, the evidence (conviction, certain, proof) of things not seen.

- **Substance:** The being, essence, material property. The essential nature, or inherit part of a thing. That of which a physical things consists. The essential material forming a thing; that in which properties or attributes inhere.
- **Confirmation:** Strengthen or make firm. Establish and encourage.
- **Title Deed:** A deed or document containing or constituting evidence of ownership. That which justifies or substantiates a claim or recognized right. An assertion of right or claim.
- **Confidence:** Firm trust, reliance. Assured expectation and boldness.
- **Assurance:** Formal guarantee, engagement, or pledge. As a law term- The security of a title to property.
- **Being Sure:** Trustworthy, firm, steadfast. Can be depended or relied on. Reliable, steady, unflinching. Firmly established and stable. Convinced, confident, having no doubt. Certain to come or happen, inevitable, certain to be. Established as a truth or fact; not to be doubted. Unfailing and reliable.

Faith Is The Substance, Confirmation, Title Deed, Confidence, Assurance, And Being Sure Of What We Hope For!

- **Evidence:** An indication, a sign. Facts or testimony in support of a conclusion, statement or belief. Something serving as proof. Manifestation or display. To attest, demonstrate or prove. Information (in the form of personal or documented testimony or the production of material objects) tending or used to establish facts in a legal investigation. A document by means of which a fact is established- example, a title-deed.
- **Conviction:** The act of convincing someone of something. Strong belief on the ground of satisfactory reasons, evidence, or proof.
- **Certain:** Determined, fixed; not variable. Definite, precise, exact, sure, inevitable, unfailing; wholly reliable. Established as truth or fact; not to be doubted. Assured and convinced.
- **Proof:** A piece of evidence or an argument establishing a fact or the truth or validity of a statement. A sequence of steps by which a theorem is derived from given premises. The action, process, or fact of establishing the truth or validity of a statement.

Faith Is The Evidence, Conviction, Certain, Proof, Of Things Not Seen!

2. Now Faith is the Substance

The above statement does not make sense to a lot of people. When most Christians here the word "faith," they are only thinking of the one side of faith- the noun usage, "the Faith." In other words, they are thinking of, "the tenants of the faith" represented in a creed- a belief system in statement form. However, the flip side of understanding faith is through Scripture as spiritual laws. I am talking about a faith in God that manifests the Kingdom of God on the earth, something that is real and tangible.

Hebrews 11:3 (KJV)

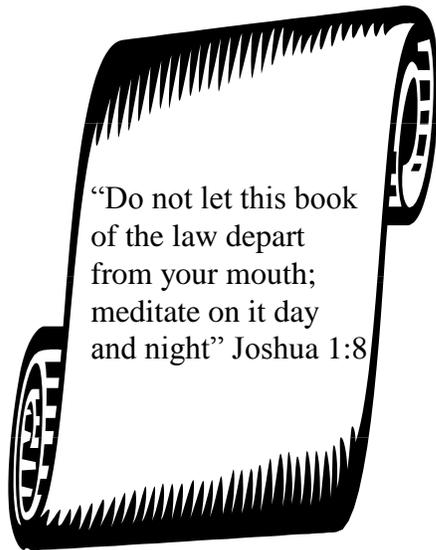
Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear.

The NIV translation of the Bible states concerning the latter part of this verse, "...so that what is seen was not made out of what was visible."

If God is a Faith God and He created the universe by exercising His faith, then according to Hebrews 11:3, the faith He released was the Word of God. The substance of faith is God's Word, filled with spiritual life- Jesus said in John 6:63, "*The words I have spoken to you are spirit and they are life.*"

Just think about it, faith is not visible nor are words, but faith takes words, and releases them into space to create substance, and reality in our lives. I like something a minister once said about faith, “*Faith is grasping the unrealities of hope and bringing them into the realm of reality.*”

We have been discussing, “What Is Faith” and according to Hebrews 11:3, faith is God’s Word in action, or faith is the spoken Word of God. Faith has a voice, “It Is Written.” Faith will say about itself everything that the Word says, for faith in God is simply faith in His Word.



Let me illustrate that Faith and God’s Word are synonymous terms. In Romans 12:3 it says, “*In accordance to the measure of faith God has given you.*”

According to 1 Peter 1:23, we were born again through the Word of God. The Word we heard and received for salvation is the measure of faith we start off with as Christians.

That measure of faith grows as we hear and receive more of God’s Word in our life- “*Faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the Word of God*” Romans 10:17. Therefore, our faith level is measured by the Word level that is resident, and operative in our hearts.

Here is a principle that will help you immensely. Faith always speaks in the present tense- Faith is NOW! If it is not happening now then it is not faith, because faith begins working the moment it is released out of your heart, and through your mouth. Hope on the other hand is always future tense. Hope encompasses your dreams, and vision for tomorrow. Faith works today to bring about those dreams and visions, and bring them into reality. If you are just a hoping, and a praying, you will be waiting a long time. We can never catch up to hope because it is always ahead of us but faith is now, present tense.

Faith Is Now: Jesus said in Mark 11:24, “*Therefore I tell you, whatever you ask for in prayer, believe that you have received it, and it will be yours.*”

Hope Is Future: Romans 8:24-25, “*But in this hope we were saved. But hope that is seen is no hope at all. Who hopes for what he already has? But if we hope for what we do not have, we wait for it patiently.*”

Faith says, “I have it now according to God’s Word. Thank you Jesus, by your stripes I was healed.” Notice that Jesus said, “it will be yours,” your prayer may not immediately materialize before your very eyes, but as far as faith is concerned you already have it! Hope is important because it creates the desire to receive from God, but “*who hopes for what he already has?*” If you are only hoping to receive something from God that is the first step, but without faith there will be no substance to what you desire. When you add faith (legs) to your hope (desires), the answer is right around the corner.

Did you notice that in 1 Peter 2:24 it says, “...by his stripes you were healed.” The word, “were” means past tense, it already happened, it’s finished, an established fact, and nothing more can be done to change it. God has done everything He is going to do about your healing and meeting any other need in your life. I can say this because of what 2 Peter 1:2-4 says.

2 Peter 1:2-4

Grace and peace be yours in abundance through the knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord. His divine power has given us everything we need for life and godliness through our knowledge of him who called us by his own glory and goodness. Through these he has given us his very great and precious promises, so that through them you may participate in the divine nature and escape the corruption in the world caused by evil desires.

Ephesians 1:3

Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us in the heavenly realms with every spiritual blessing in Christ.

2 Corinthians 1:20

For no matter how many promises God has made, they are “Yes” in Christ. And so through him the “Amen” is spoken by us to the glory of God.

God has already made ample provision for us to meet every need that we may encounter in life. By simply mixing faith with God’s promises we create the reality of it in our lives so that we can taste and see that the Lord is good. The blessings of God are not going to drop on us like ripe cherries from a cherry tree. Even though God gave the people of Israel the Promised Land, they still had to go in and take possession of it. The Israelites had to go in and lay claim of their God given inheritance, and it was not without a fight- Joshua 1:3. The same laying a hold of our inheritance lays before the Church today. The Israelites fought their enemies in the natural, but the Church, as the spiritual Israel of today (Abraham’s spiritual seed- Galatians 4:29), must fight in the spiritual arena the good fight of faith- by standing on God’s Word according to 1 Timothy 6:12.

3. Now Faith is the Evidence



Now the word, “Evidence” is a legal term that denotes words like, “Proof or Title-Deed.” Faith is not some practice that weird religious nuts exercise. Some ridiculous notions of presumption and supposition. This, “Faith Business” as some ridicule, is really “God’s business of doing things.” It is very real from a spiritual standpoint. The word assurance (KJV) or proof (NIV) in Acts 17:31 is the same Greek word as faith.

You may ask, “How can faith be my evidence when I can’t see any change taking place?” Actually we can see faith; when we open the Bible and read God’s Word we are gazing upon the eternal beauty of faith. God’s Word or faith is the evidence of things that are not seen, just take God at His Word. The proof of our answer is found upon the pages of the Holy Bible. The testimony that God has declared about our situation is all that we need in order to take it to the bank, and cash in on His provision for our lives.

Go back and read the definition of evidence again- the Bible is all of that. The circumstances are indicating one thing and God’s Word is saying something else. Who are we going to believe, what we see or what God has already said. Faith is simply agreeing with God’s Word, which is more real than what we feel, hear or see. Until we get the promises of God into our heart where faith works, the circumstances of life will probably be more real to us. Now let’s look at Abraham:

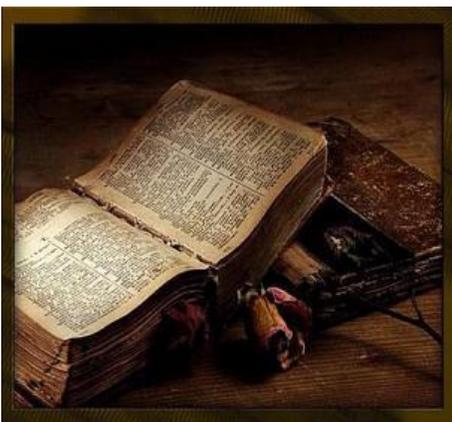
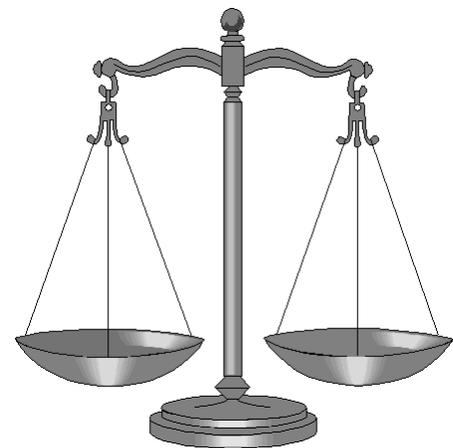
Romans 4:17-21

As it is written: **“I have made you a father of many nations.”** He is our father in the sight of God, in whom he believed--the God who gives life to the dead and calls things that are not as though they were. Against all hope, Abraham in hope believed and so became the father of many nations, just as it had been said to him, **“So shall your offspring be.”** Without weakening in his faith, **he faced the fact that his body was as good as dead-** since he was about a hundred years old- and that Sarah’s womb was also dead. **Yet he did not waver through unbelief regarding the promise of God,** but was strengthened in his faith and gave glory to God, **being fully persuaded that God had power to do what he had promised.**

Abraham had two pieces of evidence to look at. One was the fact that, *“his body was as good as dead”*. The other was God’s promise, *“I have made you a Father of many nations.”* Abraham had a choice to make, do I believe God or do I believe in the condition of my body. Would you like to know the secret to Abraham’s faith? God gave him some proof that the promise was greater than the circumstance.

When God made his promise to Abraham, since there was no one greater for him to swear by, he swore by himself, saying, **“I will surely bless you and give you many descendants.”** And so after waiting patiently, Abraham received what was promised. Men swear by someone greater than themselves, and the oath confirms what is said and puts an end to all argument.

Because God wanted to make the unchanging nature of his purpose very clear to the heirs of what was promised, **he confirmed it with an oath.** God did this so that, by two unchangeable things in which **it is impossible for God to lie,** we who have fled to take hold of the hope offered to us may be greatly encouraged. We have this hope as an anchor for the soul, firm and secure.
Hebrews 6:13-19



The two pieces of evidence that Abraham had working for him was, *“He confirmed his promise with an oath, and the fact that it is impossible for God to lie.”* These two pieces of evidence are inherent within the Word of God; concerning faith it always comes back to God’s Word. Please note that hope also comes by hearing the promise of God. Faith never denies the evidence that the natural realm supplies, but faith acknowledges and adheres to a higher law or form of evidence; truth supersedes circumstances- God’s Word never fails, 2 Corinthians 10:3-4. So when medical science supplies us with their evidence, let’s show them ours, *“It is written!”*

4. Three Kinds of Faith

A) Natural Human Faith

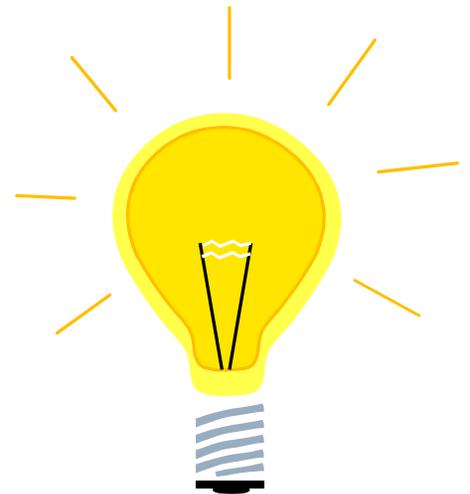
Everyone has natural human faith, saint or sinner alike. It is simply believing with the five physical senses. What we feel, taste, touch, smell and hear. With the five physical senses we contact this natural world. This natural world is real to us because we detect it's presence through our physical body.

This natural human faith is based on knowledge and experience previously gathered through our five senses, and stored in our mind. Notice that the mind, and the body work very close together when it comes to functioning in this natural world. Without our five senses our mind would be completely in the dark as to what is going on around us. Likewise without our mind to assimilate and process the data, our body would have no course of action to take. Without instructions from our brain, our body won't respond. Our senses probe the natural world and feed the information into our brain where it is processed. This information is compared to previous experiences supplied from our memory banks. As a result, a course of action is produced and conveyed back to the body which responds accordingly. Let's see some examples of this natural human faith in action:

I am sure that you have great faith in electricity to turn on the lights in your house. Suppose you and your family come home late and the house is completely dark. Well, you know by experience that when you flip that switch on inside your door that the hall light is going to come on. As a matter of fact you know it without thinking, you have developed such a high degree of natural human faith in this area of your life that you expect that light to turn on- trial and error taught you that.

Suppose you invite a primitive native from some third world country to stay with you at your home. This person has never seen a light bulb before, and he has no earthly idea what electricity is. If you were to tell him that flicking a switch will create light in that bulb, would he believe you? Probably not, because for natural human faith to operate it has to have seen it work before in order to believe it will work now. Knowledge and experience are the keys to operating in natural human faith.

You could try to explain and persuade him that it works, but until he experiences it for himself, he will still have doubts. Your words will certainly create curiosity and interest but he won't be a believer until he sees the results. Once he has practiced turning a light on a number of times he will become confident that it will work for him every time.





Can you see how we have taken natural human faith for granted. There are so many things that we do automatically, without thinking. When you go to sit on a chair, how do you know it's going to support your weight? You know that the chair you are about to sit on is going to support your weight, because every chair you sat on before supported your weight- you know it by experience. Suppose, about 50% of the chairs you sat on fell apart and

you landed on the floor. Would you be so confident to sit in a chair without testing it first? Then once you are convinced that the chair will support your weight, you will sit in it. All this is common sense isn't it. Even the rank sinner and atheist understand these concepts, and operates in them every day without thinking just like you do. Most Christians are experts in functioning in this natural realm, but when it comes to operating in the spiritual realm, they are as helpless as a newborn baby.

Yet what about faith in God's Word, can it be that simple. Can living by faith be as natural to me as sitting in a chair. I have developed tremendous trust and reliance in natural things, why can't I have that same degree of faith in spiritual things- we can!

B) Bible Believing Faith

I am not going to go into much detail here, because the principles of Bible believing faith will be covered in greater detail in the following sections. However, there are a few things I would like to point out to you. First of all, not everyone can operate in the spiritual side of faith.

2 Thessalonians 3:2

And pray that we may be delivered from wicked and evil men, for not everyone has faith.

According to this passage of Scripture, wicked and evil men do not have faith. Not at all speaking about natural human faith. The context of this passage of Scripture is referring to the operation of Bible Faith- faith in God's Word. The unsaved are not born again, they do not have the Word of God in their heart. They have no legal standing to claim the promises of God without coming to Jesus first. Bible faith works out of the heart of the believer who has been born again.

According to Romans 12:3, God has given every child of God, "The measure of faith." Notice every believer starts their Christian race with the same measure. It is up to each individual to develop and use their faith so that it will grow and increase. God has left the development of our faith up to us. If we don't do it, it won't be done. Spiritual growth is a process, just as you don't become developed in operating in natural human faith overnight, neither is it the case in operating in Bible believing faith.

Let's draw some parallel principles of natural human faith and Bible faith. We have said that natural human faith is developed through knowledge and experience. Bible faith operates along the same lines, through the knowledge of God's Word, and putting it into practice. The more experience we have in operating Bible faith in a particular area (like healing), the more proficient we are at receiving healing. Yet it is important to understand that just because we have faith in one area does not mean that we automatically have faith in every other area. The principles for attaining faith for healing, works the same as it does for any other promise from God, but we still have to build the promises of God for each subject area in our spirit in order to receive from those other areas of God's Word.



For example, you may have developed a tremendous amount of natural human faith in driving an automobile. Through knowledge and experience you have perfected your driving skills to a literal science. Yet, if I put you inside a helicopter and there is no steering wheel or turn signals, you are lost. If you are smart, you will get out of that thing unless you want to crash and burn.

However, if you go to flying school, and take lessons with an instructor, you can get back into that same helicopter, and fly it with all the confidence and ability in the world. What is the difference, you now have knowledge and experience to operate that machine.

The same thing is true concerning the operation of faith in God's Word. Over time, through knowledge and experience, we will acquire a highly developed faith to receive physical healing for our body. Yet when it comes to receiving financial needs met, we may not have a bit of faith for it. However, like going to flying school, if we train and develop our spirit in the area of releasing faith concerning finances, we will grow to the place of receiving finances on the same level as receiving healing. All of us are at different faith levels for receiving from God in these different areas. Remember, the faith level we operate in for a particular area, is in proportion to the measure of God's Word in our hearts, and spoken out of our mouths. Also, as we put God's Word into practice and experience the reality of it first hand in our lives, that measure of faith will grow and increase- 2 Thessalonians 1:3.

C) Special Faith

Special faith is a temporary deposit of faith from God in our heart. Usually it is given in conjunction with the working of miracles. Special faith is a manifestation of the Spirit of God in a particular instance. This deposit of faith is beyond our capacity to believe. In order for God to get some jobs done here on earth, He can't wait for us to spend the rest of our lives developing our faith to a certain level in order to receive this miracle from God. Therefore, God will deposit special faith in us only for that particular instance. Once the miracle has manifested, the special faith is gone. If we were to face the same situation again, unless God gave us another deposit of special faith, we would not be in a position to believe for it. This manifestation of the Holy Spirit is as He wills- 1 Corinthians 12:11.

1 Corinthians 12:7-9

Now to each one the manifestation of the Spirit is given for the common good. To one there is given through the Spirit the message of wisdom, to another the message of knowledge by means of the same Spirit, to another faith by the same Spirit.

We know that faith comes by hearing the Word according to Romans 10:17. We can develop our faith in the promises of God to receive all our needs met. Suppose we come across a person who is unsaved and has died physically. We know he has gone to hell. The first thing that may come in our mind is, "If he could be raised from the dead, he could get saved, and not have to go to hell forever." So we pray and nothing happens, our faith is not strong and developed enough on a personal level to get the job done. If we are by ourselves, there is no time to get a body of believers together to pray in agreement, and release the corporate anointing. So what do we do in a case like this. I would suggest that we do like what I believe Peter had done in the book of Acts. Peter asked the Father for a manifestation of special faith by the Holy Spirit in order to work a miracle.

Acts 9:36-42

In Joppa there was a disciple named Tabitha (which, when translated, is Dorcas), who was always doing good and helping the poor. About that time she became sick and died, and her body was washed and placed in an upstairs room. Lydda was near Joppa; so when the disciples heard that Peter was in Lydda, they sent two men to him and urged him, "Please come at once!" Peter went with them, and when he arrived he was taken upstairs to the room. All the widows stood around him, crying and showing him the robes and other clothing that Dorcas had made while she was still with them. Peter sent them all out of the room; then he got down on his knees and prayed. Turning toward the dead woman, he said, "Tabitha, get up." She opened her eyes, and seeing Peter she sat up. He took her by the hand and helped her to her feet. Then he called the believers and the widows and presented her to them alive. This became known all over Joppa, and many people believed in the Lord.

So what would Peter have prayed? I believe that he was doing what Paul instructed believers to do according to 1 Corinthians 14:1, "*Follow the way of love and eagerly desire spiritual gifts, especially the gift of prophecy.*" He also said the same thing in 1 Corinthians 12:31, "*But eagerly desire the greater gifts.*" I believe that Peter knew he did not personally have the faith to raise the dead, so he prayed to God for the manifestation of the Spirit. As it was, God answered his prayer and raised her from the dead through Peter.

As believers today, we will encounter situations that are beyond our faith to believe, and it may be a life or death situation. There is no time to develop our faith for that moment, so I encourage you to ask the Father for special faith for that situation. The incredible thing about special faith, is that it enables us to believe for the impossible, far beyond our own faith level to believe. It would be like flying that helicopter supernaturally without having been trained. Yet for that crucial moment, God could give us special faith to supply knowledge and skill where there was none, in order to fly that machine to safety.

Three Kinds Of Faith:

Natural Human Faith, Bible Believing Faith & Special Faith

Unit 8 Review:

From a Biblical point of view, what is faith?

What is meant by the statement- “Faith is Now?”

Explain the principle of Faith being a “Substance” according to God’s Word.

Faith is the “Evidence” please elaborate on this.

List the three kinds of faith and provide a brief description for each.

B. The Word of Faith

Before we begin examining the principles of “The Word Of Faith” in light of the Bible, let’s clarify a few things right now. “The Word of Faith” message is not some charismatic fad that is here today and gone tomorrow, nor is it a label for a Christian denomination or representative of some religious group. These Biblical principles were first mentioned in the Bible by Moses in Deuteronomy 30:11-14:

Now what I am commanding you today is not too difficult for you or beyond your reach. It is not up in heaven, so that you have to ask, “Who will ascend into heaven to get it and proclaim it to us so we may obey it?” Nor is it beyond the sea, so that you have to ask, “Who will cross the sea to get it and proclaim it to us so we may obey it?” No, the word is very near you; it is in your mouth and in your heart so you may obey it.

The Apostle Paul also quoted Moses in Romans 10:4-11 in order to reiterate that these eternal spiritual laws applies to us under the New Covenant as well:

Christ is the end of the law so that there may be righteousness for everyone who believes. Moses describes in this way the righteousness that is by the law: “The man who does these things will live by them.” But the righteousness that is by faith says: “Do not say in your heart, ‘Who will ascend into heaven?’ ” (that is, to bring Christ down) “or ‘Who will descend into the deep?’ ” (that is, to bring Christ up from the dead). But what does it say? “The word is near you; it is in your mouth and in your heart,” that is, the word of faith we are proclaiming: That if you confess with your mouth, “Jesus is Lord,” and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved. For it is with your heart that you believe and are justified, and it is with your mouth that you confess and are saved.

As we can plainly see, when we were born again in Christ, we had acted upon “The Word of Faith” principles, whether we realized it or not. Therefore, technically speaking every believer in Jesus is a “Word of Faith” person- we would have to be in order to be saved! I will say it again, “The Word of Faith” is not heresy, a cult or some Christian fad. I say all this because some folks have been put off by people who have acted foolishly with faith. Unfortunately, these same critics have been just as foolish by treating these Biblical truths with contempt. My hope is that the balanced teaching on this subject will bring both sides to “The Word of Faith” teaching back to the middle of the road.

Please understand this, faith is not a “Magic Wand” or “Formula” that anybody, regardless of their lifestyle or quality of fellowship with God can use. In other words, living by faith is a lifestyle, not a get rich scheme. We do not use our faith to manipulate or demand God for anything. Faith is simply receiving from God what He has already given us through the redemptive work of Jesus Christ- Hebrews 9:12-15; 2 Peter 1:1-4. Receiving by faith is like a little child receiving good gifts from his/her father- Matthew 7:9-11; James1:17. We need not worry in thinking that faith can be abused, it can’t. Some people may have given it a bad name through their ignorance, but God has put within faith some safeguards that prevents it from being abused, and used for selfish uses-Galatians 5:6; 1 John 5:14-15;3:19-22; James 4:1-3.

1. Faith versus Works

In this next section of our study on faith, I am going to cover some background information that will best illustrate the principles of faith. Please bear with me as I cover these basic truths. I will endeavor to paint in your mind the differences between the law of works under the Old Covenant, and the law of faith under the New Covenant.

Romans 3:27 (KJV)

Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith.

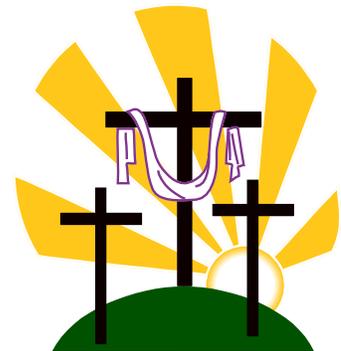
The Law Of The New Covenant Is The Law Of Faith!

A) God's Answer To Man's Dilemma

The Scriptures declare that the whole world is a prisoner of sin, hopelessly lost and in need of a savior (Galatians 3:22; Romans 3:23)- the penalty of sin is death Romans 6:23. In the garden of Eden, God warned Adam and Eve that if they ate of the forbidden fruit, they would surely die- Genesis 2:17. Unfortunately, they disobeyed God anyway and received the sentence of death over their lives. The kind of death God was referring to was spiritual death. Death first entered into their spirit natures, then in the process of time, took its toll on their physical bodies, but it took a few hundred years before they died physically- Genesis chapter 5. One meaning of the word "Death" is "to be separated." When the physical body dies, our spirit and soul is separated from our body. When a person dies spiritually, he/she is alienated from God- Ephesians 2: 1-3, 11-12. Spiritual death also infers taking on the spiritual nature of Satan- John 8:44; 1 John 3:10. As a result of Adam's high treason, in selling out to Satan, the devil became the god of this world system, by usurping Adam's authority- 2 Corinthians 4:4; 1 John 5:19. As a result, man found himself in a totally helpless, hopeless situation. He was doomed to eternal separation from God to the Lake of Fire. Not only that, but while they live out their days on earth, they would be servants of sin, and a slave to Satan. Mankind outside of Christ has been living under the curse ever since.

But Now For The Rest Of The Story...

God already knew man was going to fall and announced His plan for a savior to redeem man from the clutches of Satan in Genesis 3:15 and John 3:16. Justice, demands payment for the crimes we have committed- death! Thank God, Jesus became our perfect, sinless substitute that by the grace of God He would taste death for all of mankind- Hebrews 2:9. Through His death, burial and resurrection, Jesus satisfied the claims of justice, and we are free!



Once and for all Jesus did away with sin by the sacrifice of Himself- Hebrews 9:26. He did what man could not do- save himself from his own destruction. God laid upon Jesus the sin of the world and judged our sin in Jesus on that cross. Isaiah chapter 53 is a awesome description of the redemptive work Jesus achieved for us through His death, burial, and resurrection to the right hand of the Father.

B) Redeemed

Spirit- He was pierced for our transgressions, He was crushed for our iniquities- the remission of sins.
Soul- The chastisement of our peace was upon Him- the crown of thorns was for our peace of mind.
Body- By His stripes we are healed- Jesus was flogged for our physical healing.

Colossians 1:13-14 (KJV)

Who has delivered us from the power of darkness, and has translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins.

C) The Purpose Of The Law

When God created a nation out of Abraham, called Israel, He gave them a law- the 10 Commandments. This law was the foundation on which their society was built. However, man's sinful condition due to Adam's fall prevented them from living up to this standard, for it required absolute perfection. The law was God's holy standard which defined what sin was, but it was impossible for anyone to keep it perfectly- Romans 7:7-25. Therefore, through the law, man's sinful nature resulted in condemnation rather than salvation.

As a result, God set up the Levitical priesthood in conjunction with the law in order to atone for the sins of the people who were breaking the 10 commandments- Hebrews 7:11. The animal sacrifices only covered sin, it could not wash them away and pay for them- Hebrews 9:1-10. This system was only temporary until, Jesus would come and fulfill the law on our behalf- Hebrews 10:1-4. God found fault with the people, they could not live up to those high standards- Hebrews 8:7-13, Galatians 3:21-22. It was soon so very obvious, man needed a Savior.

So if the law was weak and useless, because it could not save anyone (Hebrews 7:18-19), why was it introduced in the first place- Galatians 3:19, 23?

Galatians 3:24-27

So the law was put in charge to lead us to Christ that we might be justified by faith. Now that faith has come, we are no longer under the supervision of the law. You are all sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus, for all of you who were baptized into Christ have clothed yourselves with Christ.

The purpose of the law was to reveal to man his hopeless situation, unable save himself from sin. No matter how hard he may try, he cannot meet the standard of perfection. One definition of sin is, "missing the mark" or anything less than perfection. The law made it obvious that man needed a savior! Jesus came and lived the perfect life for us as our substitute, so we could then be reconciled back to the Father through faith in Jesus. Simple right, at least until religion came on the scene.

D) Religious Works- A Curse

The purpose of the law was to reveal man's inability to save himself, but many have used the law to fabricate a law of religious works in order to save themselves, instead of relying on God's grace.

Romans 9:30-31

What then shall we say? That the Gentiles, who did not pursue righteousness, have obtained it, a righteousness that is by faith; but Israel, who pursued a law of righteousness, has not attained it.

Romans 10:1-3

Brothers, my heart's desire and prayer to God for the Israelites is that they may be saved. For I can testify about them that they are zealous for God, but their zeal is not based on knowledge. Since they did not know the righteousness that comes from God and sought to establish their own, they did not submit to God's righteousness.

When man pursues a law of works it's called religion. It is man's way to come back to God, but it is not God's way. God's way is to put faith in Jesus Christ in absolute dependence and trust. Besides, it was too late for man to save himself, he had already committed sin, he couldn't undue what he had done. All that was left for mankind to do is pay the penalty- death! Unless of course he could find a suitable substitute, one who was perfect and blameless to pay the price. Only Jesus fits that description, and for this very reason He came to earth, to redeem mankind from the consequences of sin- John 1:29.

John 6:28-29

Then they asked him, “What must we do to do the works God requires?” Jesus answered, “The work of God is this: to believe in the one he has sent.”

John 14:6

Jesus answered, “I am the way and the truth and the life. **No one comes to the Father except through me.**”

All who rely on a law of works, a code of ethics, good morals and behavior as merit in order to earn their way into heaven, are under a curse and have fallen away from grace. Our own works of righteousness in God’s sight is as filthy rags- Isaiah 64:6.

Galatians 3:10-12

All who rely on observing the law are under a curse, for it is written: “Cursed is everyone who does not continue to do everything written in the Book of the Law.” Clearly no one is justified before God by the law, because, “The righteous will live by faith.” The law is not based on faith; on the contrary, “The man who does these things will live by them.”

Galatians 5:4-5

You who are trying to be justified by law have been alienated from Christ; you have fallen away from grace. But by faith we eagerly await through the Spirit the righteousness for which we hope.

Did you notice the phrase in Galatians 3:12, “*The man who does these things will live by them.*” This is also quoted by Paul in Romans 10:5, representing the righteousness that is by the law- Leviticus 18:5.

All the false religions and cults in this world, base their religious philosophy on a system of works; putting total dependence on the individual to earn or deserve their salvation- instead of on Jesus as in Colossians 2:8, 20-23. They have a form of godliness, but deny the power of God that is found in the Gospel of Jesus Christ alone- 2 Timothy 3:5; Romans 1:16. The devil is very religious, he believes in God (James 2:19), and does not mind if people are religious as long as they don’t exercise any faith in God’s Word. There are many morally religious people who give to charities, and even attend church regularly, but they are not born again (John 3:3), and sadly are on their way to hell. They have been deceived into thinking that good works will save them. Israel had fallen into the same religious works trap. They thought that just being a Jew was enough to warrant their salvation- Romans 2:29; 9:6-8.

All Who Rely On Observing The Law Are Under A Curse!

E) The Promise Is Received Through Faith

The good news of the Gospel is that reconciliation back to the Father God, is received through faith in Jesus Christ alone- Acts 4:12. So faith is not based on our good works, but simply believing the Good News message and confessing Jesus as Lord- by grace through faith according to Ephesians 2:8-9. Abraham had a Gospel message of his time, that through his lineage, the redeemer of mankind would come. Abraham believed God concerning this promise, and it was credited to him as righteousness. Abraham was justified before God through faith in God’s Word- Romans 4:22-25.

Romans 4:1-6

What then shall we say that Abraham, our forefather, discovered in this matter? If, in fact, Abraham was justified by works, he had something to boast about--but not before God. What does the Scripture say? **“Abraham believed God, and it was credited to him as righteousness.”** Now when a man works, his wages are not credited to him as a gift, but as an obligation. However, to the man who does not work **but trusts God** who justifies the wicked, his faith is credited as righteousness. David says the same thing when he speaks of the blessedness of the man to whom God credits righteousness apart from works. **Therefore, the promise comes by faith**, so that it may be by grace and may be guaranteed to all Abraham's offspring--not only to those who are of the law but also to those who are of the faith of Abraham. He is the father of us all.

In Galatians 3:22 it says, “...so that what was promised, **being given through faith** in Jesus Christ, might be given to those who believe.” All Bible believing Christians understand this simple principle. The passage of Scripture we probably use most often in leading a lost person into receiving the gift of eternal life is found in Romans 10:9-13. However, go back one verse, to verse 8 and read it:

Romans 10:8

But what does it say? **“The word is near you; it is in your mouth and in your heart,” that is, the word of faith we are proclaiming...**

The Gospel message is “The Word of Faith Message”- mixing faith with God’s Word. These last few pages have been leading up to this major point. Most Christians separate, “Word of Faith” principles from the Gospel, but it is the Gospel message mixed with these principles that imparts righteousness.

When a sinner hears the Gospel message about Jesus, and believes it in their heart, and confesses Jesus as Lord, they have just appropriated, “The Word of Faith” principles to receive salvation. Unfortunately, a lot of Christians stop there at the new birth. They had a onetime experience with “The Word of Faith,” but scarcely receive anything else from God through these Biblical principles.

As a consequence, they revert back to a law of works, trying to earn God’s favor, in order to get in His good graces, and so somehow merit a blessing from the Lord- they have fallen away from grace according to Galatians 3:3; 5:4. If they have a need, instead of mixing faith with the Word in prayer, they resort to their own resources, ideas and maneuverings to get their needs met on their own- that is religion all over again! Without knowing it, they are under a curse all over again, even though they are saved. It’s a curse to go through life without living by God’s power. Dear brother and sister, that’s exactly what will happen to us unless we learn to appropriate “The Word of Faith” principles in order to activate God’s promises in our lives to overcome- by His grace (power), through our faith (believing).

I contribute this tragic occurrence among Christians as a lack of proper Biblical teaching. God is a faith God, and everything we receive from Him is by faith, not just for receiving the new birth alone- Hebrews 11:6. Therefore, the same, “Word of Faith” principles we used (whether we knew of them at the time or not), to receive the gift of eternal life, is the same principles we must appropriate to receive all the other promises of God that are outlined in His Word.

Receiving from God through faith is meant to be a lifestyle that ushers us into His rest, and provision for our lives- Hebrews 4:1-3. All the promises of God are appropriated through these, “Word of Faith” principles. It is now my pleasure to go into the next part of this lesson and actually teach on, “The Word of Faith” principles themselves. The main text that we will be using is taken from the famous salvation passage of Romans 10:9-13.

We Receive Everything From God The Same Way - Through The Word Of Faith!

2. Two Word of Faith Principles

The spiritual law of “The Word of Faith” has two primary principles that govern its operation. The first one is the, “Word in your Mouth” and the second is the, “Word in your Heart.” The message of the “Word of Faith” is very simple. Simply, put God’s Word in your mouth until it gets into your heart. In time, faith will produce the substance of the promise in your life- the things hoped for.

Romans 10:8

But what does it say? **“The word is near you; it is in your mouth and in your heart,”** that is, the word of faith we are proclaiming.

A) The Word In Your Mouth

Bible meditation is the way that we get God’s Word in our mouth. There are two misconceptions that are attributed to the word, “meditation.” First of all, most Christians attribute this practice to eastern religions; folks who sit on the ground and mumble all day. The second is, our society thinks we are crazy when they catch us speaking the Word over ourselves.

Meditation is a practice that goes all the way back to the book of Genesis- Genesis 24:63. The people of Israel were instructed to meditate on God’s Word, day and night in Joshua 1:8. The very word “Meditate” simply means to mutter sounds or to speak words. In Biblical context, meditation simply means to speak the Word of God over and over out loud. To the world, this practice may appear strange, but it is so very fundamental to our spiritual growth and to the life of faith.

If we are ever going to grow up spiritually and get anywhere with God, we must establish Bible meditation as a daily priority and practice.

Hebrew definition:

To mutter, speak, talk, utter, to ponder & imagine. To converse with oneself aloud, to declare and pray.

Meditation is not a quiet exercise, but is meant to be a vocal experience of speaking the Word out loud so we can hear it.



Joshua 1:8-9

Do not let this Book of the Law depart from your mouth; meditate on it day and night, so that you may be careful to do everything written in it. Then you will be prosperous and successful.

Psalms 1:2

But his delight is in the law of the LORD, and on his law he meditates day and night.

Psalms 119:148

My eyes stay open through the watches of the night, that I may meditate on your promises.

The first stage of confessing God's Word is doing little more than causing faith to come. This is not a formula. This is a way of life. As we can see by the Scriptures above, Bible meditation should be practiced by the believer all the time- day and night. Romans 10:17 (KJV) says, "*So then faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.*" Meditating on God's Word (Speaking it out loud) causes the spiritual force of faith to come into our ears, through our mind and into our spirit. Faith comes by hearing the Word, because the Word of God is full of faith.

The only way we can measure our faith is to measure the amount of Word that is in our heart. The Kingdom of God within us grows as our faith grows. Our faith grows only as we meditate on the Word of God. Bible meditation is not Bible memorization. Certainly as we meditate on the Word, we will automatically memorize many Scriptures.

However, our goal is to get the Word into our heart, and not just our head. When Christians approach the Word of God, they shouldn't handle it like a history book, just to acquire more facts about God. No, it is through God's Word that we are introduced, and have fellowship with the glorious Godhead. Bible meditation means to feed and ponder upon God's Word. This opens the door for the Holy Spirit to bring forth revelation knowledge, and direction for our lives.

Bible Meditation Is Not Bible Memorization!

When we put the promises of God in our mouth, it multiplies the power of God in our heart. As we put the Word in our mouth, it sets in motion a spiritual force called faith. For when the Word of God gets abundantly in our heart, Jesus said it would find itself abundantly back in our mouth again as the Spirit of Faith that moves mountains.

Hebrews 1:3 (KJV)

Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high;

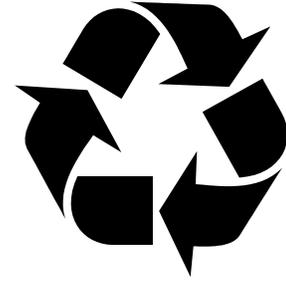
Matthew 12:34-35

O generation of vipers, how can you, being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks. A good man out of the good treasure of the heart brings forth good things: and an evil man out of the evil treasure brings forth evil things.

The Greek word, "Abundance" means: 4051. perisseuma, per-is'-syoo-mah; from G4052; a surplus, or superabundance: abundance, that was left, over and above.

Remember, the Scriptures command us to meditate on the Word day and night. As a result, the Word will get in our hearts in abundance, and what is in our hearts in abundance will come out of our mouths. What gets in our mouths gets back in our hearts with more force, and with more power. Thus creating a spiritual dynamo of faith that cycles through our being with greater intensity. The Word of God in our mouth than in our heart and in our mouth and in our heart, so on and so forth, producing more and more faith until it brings the things we hope for to pass.

The promise is in our mouth through meditation, then it gets in our heart. We speak the word of promise out of our mouth. Then as we speak it, it is picked up by our inner ear and fed into our spirit. Once it is in our heart, it gets back in our mouth. When we speak it again, it becomes stronger in our heart. Every time it goes through that process, faith is being generated to move mountains in our lives.



The secret to the blessings of God for our lives comes from simply obeying God's Word. Remember in Joshua 1:7-8, the Lord instructed Joshua to obey His Word and to do everything written in it, then he would be successful wherever he went and would be prosperous. The same thing is mentioned in Psalm 1:1-3. Jesus said the same thing in Luke 11:28, "*Blessed, rather are those who hear the word of God and obey it.*"

Isaiah 1:19-20

"If you are willing and obedient, you will eat the best from the land; but if you resist and rebel, you will be devoured by the sword." For the mouth of the LORD has spoken.

You may be thinking, "Well that's great, but I have such a hard time being a doer of the Word. What is the secret to obeying God's Word so that I can be blessed as the Lord wants me to be?" Well let's look in the Bible for the answer to that question. The secret to obeying God's Word is to get it first in our mouth and then into our heart in order to obey it as a result of change from within. The force of faith being released in our lives that causes God's grace and power to be at work in us who believe.

Deuteronomy 30:11-14

Now what I am commanding you today is not too difficult for you or beyond your reach. It is not up in heaven, so that you have to ask, "Who will ascend into heaven to get it and proclaim it to us so we may obey it?" Nor is it beyond the sea, so that you have to ask, "Who will cross the sea to get it and proclaim it to us so we may obey it?" No, the word is very near you; it is in your mouth and in your heart so you may obey it.

Joshua 1:8

Do not let this Book of the Law depart from your mouth; meditate on it day and night, so that you may be careful to do everything written in it. Then you will be prosperous and successful.

Psalms 119:11- I have hidden your word in my heart that I might not sin against you.

The secret to obeying God's Word is to meditate on God's Word so that it gets into our spirit. From there the grace of God will be released to cause us to live what we believe. Proverbs 23:7 (KJV) says, "*As a man thinks in his heart so is he.*" What we meditate on is what we are going to believe, and what we believe in our heart creates the power for us to live by what we believe. The principles of cause and effect are thus implemented. Our actions expressed in obedience to God's Word will produce the blessings of God in our life- that is a spiritual law, we are going to reap what we sow.

So if there is a area in our life where we are struggling to obey God, find the Scriptures that cover that area and begin meditating on them. Jesus said in John 15:7, "*If you remain in me and my words remain in you, ask whatever you wish, and it will be given you.*" Instead of feeble attempts to obey God's Word in our own strength, let's release the grace of God in His Word to put us over into victory.

1 Thessalonians 2:13

And we also thank God continually because, when you received the word of God, which you heard from us, you accepted it not as the word of men, but as it actually is, the word of God, which is at work in you who believe.

Acts 20:32

“Now I commit you to God and to the word of his grace, which can build you up and give you an inheritance among all those who are sanctified.”

The Word Of Promise In Our Mouth, Multiplies Faith in Our Heart!

Romans 10:12-15

For there is no difference between Jew and Gentile--the same Lord is Lord of all and richly blesses all who call on him, for, “Everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved.” How, then, can they call on the one they have not believed in? And how can they believe in the one of whom they have not heard? And how can they hear without someone preaching to them? And how can they preach unless they are sent? As it is written, “How beautiful are the feet of those who bring good news!”

Let us look at the progression of the Word of Faith principle in the proclamation of the gospel:

- a) The Church has been sent to preach the gospel- Mark 16:15-16.
- b) The sinner hears the gospel message (Word of God) from the believer.
- c) Faith enters their heart through hearing the gospel, and they believes in Jesus.
- d) Faith in the heart rises to their mouth as they confess Jesus as Lord.
- e) As a result of believing in their heart, and confessing with their mouth, Jesus as Lord, they receive salvation- the gift of eternal life and are born again.

Faith comes by hearing the Word of God being spoken, it is believed upon in the human spirit where the Word of God is conceived. Then that Word is spoken out of the mouth and salvation is received- faith!

Example: Paul at Lystra

Acts 14:8-10

In Lystra there sat a man crippled in his feet, who was lame from birth and had never walked. He listened to Paul as he was speaking. Paul looked directly at him, saw that he had faith to be healed and called out, “Stand up on your feet!” At that, the man jumped up and began to walk.

Here is an example of a man who heard and received the Word; as a result, he received faith to be healed. Paul did not give this man faith, it was hearing the Word of God out of Paul’s mouth that caused faith to come. All the man needed to do in order to make his healing complete, was act on this faith- add corresponding actions to what he heard. Paul just encouraged the man to walk. Here is a little side note to consider. Faith for salvation, healing, prosperity, and everything else we receive from God, comes first by hearing the Word on that subject, second believing it in our heart, and thirdly acting and confessing it out of our mouth.

If Paul preached the gospel message to a crowd at Lystra, and a cripple man had faith to be healed, then the gospel message Paul preached must have included a message on healing. How else could he have faith for healing, if he had not heard the Word of God concerning healing. The gospel message is a message of salvation, and the Greek word for salvation means: **To save, deliver or protect, heal, preserve, make whole, safety.**

Faith Comes By Hearing The Word Of God!

Example: Philip at Samaria

Acts 8:4-8, 12

Those who had been scattered preached the word wherever they went. Philip went down to a city in Samaria and proclaimed the Christ there. When the crowds heard Philip and saw the miraculous signs he did, they all paid close attention to what he said. With shrieks, evil spirits came out of many, and many paralytics and cripples were healed. So there was great joy in that city. But when they believed Philip as he preached the good news of the kingdom of God and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women.

When Philip went down to Samaria, the first thing he did was preach the gospel. As a result, faith for salvation came to the hearers. God confirmed His Word with signs and wonders- God always confirms His Word, not the person- Mark 16:20. The ministry of Jesus followed this same pattern, He taught and preached the Word of God. This caused faith to arise in the hearts of the people, in order for the Holy Spirit to manifest and meet the needs of the people. The faith level in our hearts, is measured by the level of God's Word resident there. Jesus was first a teacher of the Word, for He knew in order for people to be saved and healed, He had to build a foundation of the Word of Faith in them. All though out the gospels, Jesus referred to the individuals faith, which was their key to receive. They did not receive because Jesus was the Son of God, but because of their faith in His Words- Matthew 9:29;13:58.

Healing had already belonged to them as children of Abraham: Jehovah Rapha, "I am the Lord who heals you." Even under the Old Covenant, they could have received their healing before Jesus came on the scene. Well, why did they not receive? It still takes faith to receive from God regardless to which dispensation one may live under- Luke 13:16, "*Then should not this woman, a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan has kept bound for eighteen long years, be set free on the Sabbath day from what bound her?*"

Matthew 4:23

Jesus went throughout Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, preaching the good news of the kingdom, and healing every disease and sickness among the people.

Remember, that the first stage of the "Word of Faith" spiritual law is to put the Word in our mouth. This is accomplished by meditating, muttering, and speaking God's Word out loud so we can hear it. Have you ever recorded your voice on a tape recorder and played it back to yourself. To your utter amazement, what you heard out of that machine, is not how you hear yourself during normal conversations. God has made every person with two sets of hearing. The outer ear which is hearing your voice from the tape recorder, and the inner ear, which is what you hear when you are actually talking. You will hear the Word best when it is you who is doing the speaking. Your voice is picked up by your inner ear, and is fed directly into your human spirit where the incorruptible seed of God's Word grows to produce life, grace and a transformed life.

2 Corinthians 3:3

You show that you are a letter from Christ, the result of our ministry, written not with ink but with the Spirit of the living God, not on tablets of stone but on tablets of human hearts.

Psalm 45:1-2

My heart is stirred by a noble theme as I recite my verses for the king; my tongue is the pen of a skillful writer. You are most excellent of men and your lips have been anointed with grace, since God has blessed you forever.

B) The Word In Our Heart

According to Jesus in the parable of the sower, *“The seed is the Word of God”* Luke 8:11. In this book we have already talked at length about this concept. Now I want to discuss how the seed gets into our hearts, and how it grows there in order to produce a harvest. The law of seed time and harvest goes back to Genesis 1:11-12; 8:20-22. God’s natural and spiritual creations operate on these eternal laws. Here is something that we should never forget. Words are seeds, but God’s Word is incorruptible seed according to 1 Peter 1:23. There is a big difference between the two.

Sometimes people think it’s going to happen just because they say it. Saying it is involved in planting it. The problem has been that people say a few things, they plant a few seeds, then go off and leave them. We must care for that seed, because it takes time for things to manifest. When we preach the gospel we are sowing seeds; by speaking words, in this case, gospel words. When we speak words, we are sowing seeds.

If you don’t like the harvest you have been receiving, then you had better check on the seed you have been sowing- you could be sowing weeds (idle words). What we are today is a product of the words we spoke yesterday. What we say is what we will get, because if we keep saying it, we will eventually believe it in our heart. The things that we believe in our heart, will come to pass in time. God made our spirit to produce whatever (indiscriminately) we plant in there. If we don’t like the harvest, we just simply need to check on the seeds (words) we have been speaking- sowing.

Remember it’s not going to happen just because we say it once. Generally speaking, we must speak God’s Word over a period of time, before it really gets planted in the soil of our heart. God’s Word is mountain moving seed. Yet, in the beginning, none of the circumstances that we are speaking to will appear to have changed in the natural; however, if we hold fast to our confession of faith, change is forth coming- Hebrews 4:14; 10:23. Jesus said that problems would obey our faith filled words. Our faith filled words are the seeds that will move the mountains out of our life- **the sowing is in the saying!**

Mark 4:14, 20

“The farmer sows the Word. Others, like seed sown on good soil, hear the word, accept it, and produce a crop- thirty, sixty or even a hundred times what was sown.”

God’s Word is sowed in our hearts when we speak it through meditating on the promises of God. The seed contains the spirit life power of God- John 6:63! Yet until it is sowed into our spirit, it does not produce anything. Unless a farmer plants the seed, he can’t expect a harvest. The act of sowing or planting is a pre-requisite for any kind of a harvest. The same is true for the believer, the harvest or manifestation of the promise comes after the Word of Promise has been sowed into our heart. Then God causes it to grow, and the harvest comes in a process of time.

Proverbs 20:4- A sluggard does not plow in season; so at harvest time he looks but finds nothing.

Proverbs 18:20

From the fruit of his mouth a man's stomach is filled; with the harvest from his lips he is satisfied.

Isaiah 61:11- For as the soil makes the sprout come up and a garden causes seeds to grow, so the Sovereign LORD will make righteousness and praise spring up before all nations.

When a seed comes into contact with the soil and water, the seed germinates. The creative life within that seed is released. God's Word is incorruptible seed, and the life within that seed is God's grace- His life, power and ability. Water is a type of the Holy Spirit- John 4:10-14; 7:37-39. He acts as a catalyst to the Word, releasing the grace of God within it in order to produce the life of God that results in a harvest of blessing, and provision for our lives.

In the natural, the soil will not argue with the farmer, and produce something contrary to what is planted. For example, if we were to plant wheat, but the soil decided to produce corn instead. Some people have gotten the idea that it does not matter what kind of seed they sow, and it does not matter what they say. People will often say, "Well, God knows what I meant." Maybe so, but the issue is, our heart doesn't. It is programmed by God to produce whatever we sow in it- our words, good or evil. The soil of our heart does not decide whether the words we plant (say) are right or wrong. It will simply produce a harvest according to the type of seed we have planted there.

Some people in an attempt in being honest will share with others how they feel. Even when they pray, they pray the problem instead of reminding God of the promise- Isaiah 43:46 KJV. Thus, they put a death sentence over themselves with their words- Proverbs 21:23. A believer can have faith in God through the Word of God or faith in the devil by believing the words of the devil. Let's be consistent, and work faith on the positive side! We exalt God when we proclaim His Word above the circumstances of life. We exalt the devil when we yield to the circumstances of life and speak defeat, worry, and fear- Job 3:25. If we live by God's words, we would certainly die by embracing the devil's words- Genesis chapter 3; Matthew 4:4.

Remember, we have said that words are seeds but God's Word is incorruptible seed. The devil understands these principles, and he uses them to accomplish his purposes in people's lives. He will use whoever will yield to him to plant seeds (speak words) of doubt, fear, and failure into people. If people hear that long enough, that seed will get into their hearts, and they will believe, and receive a harvest of evil in their lives. As believers we have the right through Jesus Christ to sow God's Word in our lives, and into the lives of others in order to produce a harvest of righteousness and blessing for God's glory. Read the story about Sennacherib threatening Jerusalem in Isaiah chapter 36 and the story of the Israelites at Kadesh Barnea in Numbers chapters 13 & 14. These are vivid examples of seeds that the devil planted in people's lives in order to destroy them- Matthew 13:37-42.

The Human Heart Is God's Production Center!

Just think of it, we may not know exactly how the kingdom of God operates to produce a harvest, but if we just know and work the principles, we can receive God's provision for our life. I may not know how a brown cow, eating green grass can produce white milk, but I can still drink it and benefit from it. However, as God gives us more understanding of the particular workings of these spiritual laws, we will be able to operate in them more fully, like a veteran farmer- PRAISE THE LORD!

C) The Process Of Growth

Mark 4:26-29

He also said, "This is what the kingdom of God is like. A man scatters seed on the ground. Night and day, whether he sleeps or gets up, the seed sprouts and grows, though he does not know how. All by itself the soil produces grain- first the stalk, then the head, then the full kernel in the head. As soon as the grain is ripe, he puts the sickle to it, because the harvest has come."

- a) A man scatters the seed on the ground
- b) The seed sprouts and grows
- c) The stalk appears
- d) The head of grain forms
- e) The full kernel appears
- f) Then the grains ripens
- g) Harvest time has come



Here Jesus is drawing a parallel between the natural process of seed time and harvest that operates in the natural world and the spiritual process of seed time and harvest that operates in the spiritual world. Jesus said, "This is what the kingdom of God is like..." As believers, if we do not learn to operate in these spiritual laws, we are in a world of hurt. This law works whether we know all the little details or not, "though he does not know how."

If we will just work the Word, the Word will work for us. If it is not working, then we are not working the Word according to directions. The man just sowed the seed and the soil took care of everything else. While we are asleep, this principle is working. Our spirit never sleeps, and is producing the substance for the things we hope for.

1 Corinthians 3:6-9

I planted the seed, Apollos watered it, but God made it grow. So neither he who plants nor he who waters is anything, but only God, who makes things grow. The man who plants and the man who waters have one purpose, and each will be rewarded according to his own labor. For we are God's fellow workers; you are God's field, God's building.

Paul Planted the Seed: Paul preached the gospel and thus planted the seed.

Apollos watered it: Apollos was a teacher and taught that same Word that Paul preached.

God made it grow: God is the one that causes His Word to grow and produce fruit- John 15

What a rest, no manipulation, striving, and straining required. Just sow the seed, water it with praise, and thanksgiving for what His word is doing, and God will make it grow. There are some other elements that will determine the fruitfulness of our harvest- 30,60 or 100 fold. These conditions will be discussed later on in this book- like walking in love, holiness and integrity of heart.

When the Word of God is spoken, faith is released through the air. That same creative force of God that the Father spoke in the beginning, when He created the heavens, and the earth. This Word which is spoken comes to the ears of the hearer. At this point, a decision is made to accept or reject it. The human will is the door to the human heart. Upon accepting the Word, it penetrates the human spirit and germinates in the soil of his/her heart- Ezekiel 17:5-8.

D) Conditions Of The Heart

Luke 8:12: The Path

- 1) Hears the Word but it does not penetrate his heart. It just does not register there.
- 2) Since his heart has been hardened by sin (Hebrews 13:3), he does not understand it (Matthew 13:13-17). As a result, the devil comes, and takes the seed away.
- 3) Without the Word in his heart, it is impossible for him to have a harvest- Mark 16:16. One must believe in his heart in order to receive from God. This only comes from the faith that is released from the seed of God's Word within our hearts.

Luke 8:13: The Rocky Soil

- 1) This person hears the Word and receives it into his heart.
- 2) Unfortunately this person has more rocks than soil, no moisture to nourish the plant. This person is a fair weather friend who believes as long as it is convenient- Romans 9:33; John 6:59-67.

Luke 8:14: The Weeds

- 1) This person hears the Word, and receives it into his heart.
- 2) However, this person has embraced the seeds of this world- 1 John 2:15-17. The things of this world take preeminence in his life, and the Word is choked out- lack of consecration and separation.

Luke 8:15: The Good Soil

- 1) This person hears the Word, and receives it into his heart.
- 2) Notice that the condition of this heart has: Plenty of soil, no rocks and no weeds. This person retains and understands (believes it in his heart) the Word. As a result, the seed is allowed to go through its process of growth, and development to full maturity and fruition- 30, 60, 100 fold return.



Depending on the condition of the heart, and to what extent it is cultivated, watered, fertilized, and exposed to sunshine (Jesus), a harvest will result. The production capacity is thus based on the spiritual environment in which the seed is sown. The same incorruptible seed is available for all believers. The Bible is a bag of divine seed, ready to be sown in our hearts; new birth seed, healing seed, prosperity seed etc. However, one believer may receive a greater harvest than another as explained in

Matthew 13:23

“But the one who received the seed that fell on good soil is the man who hears the word and understands it. He produces a crop, yielding a hundred, sixty or thirty times what was sown.”

According to the above verse, there are three prerequisites to a harvest. To the extent that one is developed in these three conditions will determine the bounty of harvest one will reap.

Good Soil, Hears The Word, Understands It!

Mark 4:23-25 (AMP)

If any man has ears to hear, let him be listening, and perceive and comprehend. And he said to them, be careful what you are hearing. The measure of thought and study you give to the truth you hear will be the measure of virtue and knowledge that comes back to you, and more besides will be given to you who hear. For to him who has will more be given, and from him who has nothing, even what he has will be taken away by force.

The above insight that Jesus gives us is vital in understanding how the seed of God's Word operates in our hearts. First of all in verse 23, Jesus spoke of a disposition that we must embrace if the Word is going to profit us, "*If a man has ears to hear...*" We must receive the Word like a child, in humility, and a teachable spirit- James 1:21; Luke 10:21. If we do this, then the Spirit of truth will pour in so much wisdom and revelation knowledge into our spirit- like a great flood of light.

2 Timothy 4:3-4

For the time will come when men will not put up with sound doctrine. Instead, to suit their own desires, they will gather around them a great number of teachers to say what their itching ears want to hear. They will turn their ears away from the truth and turn aside to myths.

Second of all, in verse 24, Jesus warns us, "*Be careful of what you are hearing.*" Unless we want our heart to be full of weeds that will choke out the Word. The law of cause and effect is in operation here. The measure or proportion we give to hearing and studying the Word, will result in the measure, and proportion of understanding and revelation knowledge we will receive.

Finally, in verse 25, Jesus reveals the law of increase, that if we plant some seed in good soil, then a harvest will eventually result. However, if our hearts are hard, then the devil will come and steal that Word out of our lives with force. It would behoove us to take personal spiritual inventory of ourselves, in order to remove the rocks and weeds in our lives, so we can be more fruitful for God's glory.

Don't Dig Up Your Seed

We have seen that seeds are words, and the soil is the human spirit or heart. However, what instrument do we use to sow the seed- the tongue! The tongue has the potential to sow God's Word for a harvest of blessing, but it can also dig it up, and sow weeds that will produce a curse.

In Genesis, after the fall of man, Adam caused certain curses to befall mankind and this earth. One of those curses was the introduction of weeds which I believe is a type of evil words- having the capacity to speak good and evil. Proverbs says that life and death are in the power of the tongue. Until the fall, I believe that Adam only used his tongue for life.

When Adam sold out to Satan and committed high treason, man received Satan's sinful nature in his spirit, and with that the ability to speak death. The tree of the knowledge of good and evil also refers to the ability to speak life, and death with our tongues- Deuteronomy 30:19. When we speak God's Word one moment, and then speak doubt and fear (devil's words) the next moment, we have just dug up our seed.

James 1:6-8

But when he asks, he must believe and not doubt, because he who doubts is like a wave of the sea, blown and tossed by the wind. That man should not think he will receive anything from the Lord; he is a double-minded man, unstable in all he does.

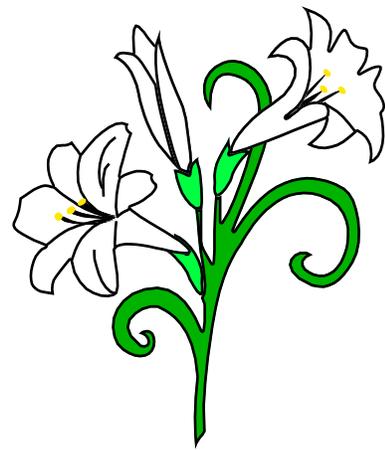
Faith in the heart gives it the ability to conceive God's promise. Once it is conceived, we will eventually have a manifestation of that promise. But it takes time. It is a process. As I have been saying, this is not a fad. This is a way of life! This is not something we try. If we are just going to try it, it won't work for us. We must have the attitude, "God said it, I believe it, and that settles it. As for me and my house, we are going to believe God's Word."

Remember, we will not attain water walking faith over night. Just because we are tired of taking that medicine that keeps us alive, is no reason to just say, "Well bless God today I'm going to start living by faith." We will more than likely die by faith if we have not developed it, and have received a full manifestation of healing in our body. Just keep taking that medicine, and believe God at the same time, until it is no longer necessary to take it anymore.

Luke 8:15

But the seed on good soil stands for those with a noble and good heart, who hear the word, retain it, and by persevering produce a crop.

**The Soil Will Produce
Whatever We Plant
In It!**



The Womb Of The Spirit

Everything that we receive from God enters first into the human spirit, where it is conceived by faith. It's in the womb of the spirit where the seed is conceived, and produces spirit life. This is the reception center of everything we receive from God. Faith in the heart gives the human spirit the ability to conceive what God has promised in His Word. It won't happen until it is conceived, just as a child is conceived in his/her mother's womb. Then after conception, eventually there will be a manifestation, harvest or birth. Sometimes we must say things over and over before we really believe them. Faith comes by hearing the Word, not by having heard it a few times.

The point is, what we say is what we sow. But it won't happen just because we say it once. It won't happen just because we say it a hundred times. Hearing the Word causes faith to come. Saying is involved in working the principle. It is conceived when we believe and doubt not in our heart. The Kingdom of God is within us (Luke 17:20-21), this is where the seed of God's Word works. When our spirit conceives the promise we spoke, it will work night and day to produce and bring it to pass. The soil, the heart or spirit of man, is designed by God to produce what is sown in it- good or bad. It is the seed that determines the type of harvest, not the soil. On the other hand, the quality of the soil determines the yield or size of the harvest. We are the ones who control the kind of seed that we sow into our own hearts.

Galatians 6:7-10

Do not be deceived: God cannot be mocked. A man reaps what he sows. The one who sows to please his sinful nature, from that nature will reap destruction; the one who sows to please the Spirit, from the Spirit will reap eternal life. Let us not become weary in doing good, for at the proper time we will reap a harvest if we do not give up. Therefore, as we have opportunity, let us do good to all people, especially to those who belong to the family of believers.



Jesus said in Luke 17: 20-21:

Once, having been asked by the Pharisees when the kingdom of God would come, Jesus replied, “The kingdom of God does not come with your careful observation, nor will people say, ‘Here it is,’ or ‘There it is,’ because the kingdom of God is within you.”

The Kingdom of God within us is capable of supplying our every need as the Garden of Eden was capable of supplying all of Adam’s needs. We have a garden inside of us- Luke 12:32; 13:19. That garden will produce whatever we need in this life, but we must sow the right kind of seed in that garden. God has furnished seed for the sower, the thousands of promises from God, found in His Word according to 2 Corinthians 9:10.

The Things We Say Are The Things We Sow. The Things We Sow Are The Things We Will Reap!

Mary Conceived The WORD In Her Spirit

Luke 1:26-38

In the sixth month, God sent the angel Gabriel to Nazareth, a town in Galilee, to a virgin pledged to be married to a man named Joseph, a descendant of David. The virgin's name was Mary. The angel went to her and said, “Greetings, you who are highly favored! The Lord is with you.” Mary was greatly troubled at his words and wondered what kind of greeting this might be. But the angel said to her, “Do not be afraid, Mary, you have found favor with God. You will be with child and give birth to a son, and you are to give him the name Jesus. He will be great and will be called the Son of the Most High. The Lord God will give him the throne of his father David, and he will reign over the house of Jacob forever; his kingdom will never end.”

“How will this be,” Mary asked the angel, “since I am a virgin?” The angel answered, “The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you. So the holy one to be born will be called the Son of God. Even Elizabeth your relative is going to have a child in her old age, and she who was said to be barren is in her sixth month. For nothing is impossible with God.” “I am the Lord's servant,” Mary answered. “May it be to me as you have said.” Then the angel left her.

Mary became pregnant with the Word of God according to John 1:14, *“The Word became flesh and lived for a while among us. We have seen his glory, the glory of the one and only Son, who came from the Father, full of grace and truth.”* Mary received the Seed of God in her womb, the incorruptible seed of God’s Word.

James 1:18

He chose to give us birth through the word of truth, that we might be a kind of firstfruits of all he created.

1 Peter 1:23

For you have been born again, not of perishable seed, but of imperishable, through the living and enduring word of God.

Remember Hebrews 11:1, *“Faith is the substance...”* and Hebrews 11:3, *“so that what is seen was not made out of what was visible.”* Faith takes the unseen and makes it seen. When we become pregnant with the living and enduring Word of God in the womb of our spirit, it will grow inside of us until it manifests. This is how the Kingdom of God operates. Giving birth to God’s Word, is faith giving substance into the natural world, the things we have hoped for- the invisible seed of God’s Word we have been planting.

Be It Unto Me According To Your Word!

Just as Mary had the person of the Word conceived in her physical womb, when we sow the written Word into our spirit man, we become pregnant with the Word just as Mary was. Once conception takes place, God begins adding substance to that Word so that our spirit begins to swell in size until we are full term. When our spirit finally gives birth, the manifestation of God’s power and life comes into this natural world for everyone to marvel at God’s handiwork.

Psalm 139:13-14

For you created my inmost being; you knit me together in my mother's womb. I praise you because I am fearfully and wonderfully made; your works are wonderful, I know that full well.

No one has ever heard of a baby being born the next day after conception. That baby grows, and goes through levels of development. After approximately nine months, the baby is born. A baby is just as much of a baby when it was first conceived, as it was when he/she was born. The difference is just how much developed it was. The Kingdom of God works the same way within our spirit. When we sow God’s seed (Word of Promise), it is conceived in the womb of our spirit, and God causes it to grow from there. It may very well take months or years for the birth of that living Word within us- the key is to be patient.

Galatians 6:9

Let us not become weary in doing good, for at the proper time we will reap a harvest if we do not give up.

Hebrews 6:12

We do not want you to become lazy, but to imitate those who through faith and patience inherit what has been promised.

Luke 8:15

But the seed on good soil stands for those with a noble and good heart, who hear the word, retain it, and by persevering produce a crop.



In our western culture, we want everything fast, right now. Unfortunately this kind of culture cultivates impatience in us. I believe that rural communities who embark upon agriculture as their livelihood understand what it means to wait patiently for a harvest. They have an advantage over us urban dwellers who are accustomed to instant this and instant that, fast food restaurants, and microwave dinners.

Unfortunately when it comes to God's Kingdom, life does not operate that way. God's economics revolve around the spiritual laws of sowing and reaping. Granted, occasionally God may bless us with a manifestation of the Spirit to meet a need that by-passed the sowing and reaping harvest, but this is the exception, and not the rule. God has supplied the seed, and it is up to us to plant His Word of Promise in our hearts to meet all our needs. With this in mind, we should start planting months in advance for any expectant needs we foresee down the road. If we wait until the last minute, short of a miracle, it will be too late.

James 5:7-8

Be patient, then, brothers, until the Lord's coming. See how the farmer waits for the land to yield its valuable crop and how patient he is for the autumn and spring rains. You too, be patient and stand firm, because the Lord's coming is near.

Unit 9 Review:

Is faith some sort of “Magic Wand” or “Formula?”

When it comes to religious works, why is it such a curse?

What is the first “Word of Faith” Principle and how does it work?

So what does the Bible instruct us to do in order to overcome bad habits?

How do we get God’s Word in our heart?

How do we dig up the seed out of our heart?

3. Right and Wrong Thinking

A) Getting To The Source

Have you ever asked yourself, “Why do I think this way concerning this area in my life?” It is probably because you heard it from someone else at some point in time. In most cases, the environment around us has influenced us with experiences that have affected our thinking. In other cases the Lord revealed things to you by His Spirit- 1 Corinthians 2:10-13. Life takes us by surprise many times; it may be new to you, but it’s not new to God- Ecclesiastes 1:9, “*what has been will be again, what has been done will be done again; there is nothing new under the sun.*” We can’t take the credit for anything good in our lives, because when it’s good, its origin ultimately came from God according to James. 1:17.

1 Corinthians 4:6-7

Now, brothers, I have applied these things to myself and Apollos for your benefit, so that you may learn from us the meaning of the saying, “Do not go beyond what is written.” Then you will not take pride in one man over against another. For who makes you different from anyone else? What do you have that you did not receive? And if you did receive it, why do you boast as though you did not?

John 3:27

To this John replied, “A man can receive only what is given him from heaven.”

The Bible has a lot to say about relationships and the company we keep. One primary reason is that our thinking and behavior will coincide in harmony with the people we associate with. Their beliefs, attitudes, and values will affect us personally. Human nature wants to belong, be part of the crowd. No one wants to be an odd ball, and be looked down upon as being weird or different.



Teenagers especially struggle with this identity crisis of wanting desperately to fit in and be liked. But it all starts when we were children. I remember watching my toddler, Cameron who was about two at the time. A friend of his came over, and the whole time they played they were imitating and copying each other. If one put a toy in his mouth, than the other would do the same. This human nature of wanting to belong, and conform is fine as long as the companions we are associated with are imitators of Christ, and not the world. People will either draw us closer to God or pull us away from Him.

1 Corinthians 15:33-34

Do not be misled: “Bad company corrupts good character.” Come back to your senses as you ought, and stop sinning; for there are some who are ignorant of God- I say this to your shame.

Proverbs 13:20- He who walks with the wise grows wise, but a companion of fools suffers harm.

Proverbs 28:7

He who keeps the law is a discerning son, but a companion of gluttons disgraces his father.

2 Corinthians 6:14-7:1

Do not be yoked together with unbelievers. For what do righteousness and wickedness have in common? Or what fellowship can light have with darkness? What harmony is there between Christ and Belial? What does a believer have in common with an unbeliever? What agreement is there between the temple of God and idols? For we are the temple of the living God. As God has said: "I will live with them and walk among them, and I will be their God, and they will be my people."

"Therefore come out from them and be separate, says the Lord. Touch no unclean thing, and I will receive you." "I will be a Father to you, and you will be my sons and daughters, says the Lord Almighty." Since we have these promises, dear friends, let us purify ourselves from everything that contaminates body and spirit, perfecting holiness out of reverence for God.



The home, culture, education and various relationships that we were associated with has had years of input into our way of thinking. Growing up, as children we were like sponges soaking in every word we heard. Our minds like computers, stored all that data into memory banks for making future decisions.

If we were not fortunate enough to have a Christian upbringing, than we probably heard a bunch a junk that has affected our way of thinking. Worse than that, if we were subject to wrong religious teaching, our life could really be messed up right now.

Ephesians 4:17

So I tell you this, and insist on it in the Lord, that you must no longer live as the Gentiles do, in the futility of their thinking.

Proverbs 23:7 (KJV)

As a man thinks in his heart so is he...

Lifestyle Is Determined By The Individuals Way Of Thinking!

Some people are in such a mess, because their minds are all screwed up with stinking thinking. They have all kinds of crazy off the wall concepts about God and life that have been placed there by the world and religious teachers. The Bible warns us about false teachers, and doctrines of devils that are poisonous to our faith.

1 Timothy 6:20-21

Timothy, guard what has been entrusted to your care. Turn away from godless chatter and the opposing ideas of what is falsely called knowledge, which some have professed and in so doing have wandered from the faith. Grace be with you.

Titus 1:10-11

For there are many rebellious people, mere talkers and deceivers, especially those of the circumcision group. They must be silenced, because they are ruining whole households by teaching things they ought not to teach-and that for the sake of dishonest gain.

We need to be careful about what we hear, and judge it with the Word of God. Let's not be like a baby bird, just accept everything we hear as the gospel truth. If it does not line up with the whole counsel of God's Word, reject it. If we are not sure, we should then put it on the shelf so to speak, and ask God for wisdom concerning the matter. Some people who have bought off on Biblical error have shipwrecked their faith, and lost their testimony, some have even lost their lives on account of it.

Acts 17:11

Now the Bereans were of more noble character than the Thessalonians, for they received the message with great eagerness and examined the Scriptures every day to see if what Paul said was true.

B) The Renewing of the Mind

The greatest battles have not been fought on the land, sea or in the air, but rather in the minds of men. The battle between good and evil first begins with who is in control of man's thinking. If we can control how a person thinks, we can control the individual- 2 Corinthians 4:3-4; Ephesians 2:1-3. What and how we believe is a direct result of our thinking, and what we think is a result of what we hear and see. This is why media and propaganda has such a powerful influence over people.

2 Corinthians 10:3-5

For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.

Our thoughts come from three sources. The first source comes through our five physical senses. The second comes from the devil sending fiery darts into our minds (ungodly) thoughts; however, these are quenched through the shield of faith, the Word of God- Ephesians 6:16. The third source is from our own human spirit, being enlightened by Holy Spirit to quicken our mind with revelation knowledge- 1 Corinthians 2:10-13; Ephesians 1:17-19; Proverbs 20:27.

If we are hearing the wrong things, in time we will think wrong, when we think wrong, we will believe wrong- we act out of and live by our beliefs. The Word of God is given to us in order to straighten out our thinking by hearing the truth- via Bible meditation. If our believing is wrong, our confession will be wrong. In other words, what we say will be wrong, and it will all hinge on our thinking. Our thinking has to be in line with the Word of God, because actually we will not be able to believe beyond the knowledge we have of the Word of God. Faith begins where the will of God is known, and God's Word is God's will.

Philippians 4:8

Finally, brothers, whatever is true, whatever is noble, whatever is right, whatever is pure, whatever is lovely, whatever is admirable--if anything is excellent or praiseworthy--think about such things.

Hebrews 3:1

Therefore, holy brothers, who share in the heavenly calling, fix your thoughts on Jesus, the apostle and high priest whom we confess.

Colossians 3:1-2

Since, then, you have been raised with Christ, set your hearts on things above, where Christ is seated at the right hand of God. Set your minds on things above, not on earthly things.

It is not only our thinking, but it is the words we speak that build power or weakness into us. It is what we confess with our lips that really dominates our inner being. We unconsciously confess what we believe which is a result of our thinking- *“For out of the overflow of the heart the mouth speaks.”*

Therefore, the root of the problem is our thinking. If we can get our mind renewed with God’s Word, we will believe it in our heart, and confess the Word with our mouth. As a result, we will have what we say. To change what we are saying we must change our believing, and changing our believing comes from changing our way of thinking, and changing our thinking comes by changing what we are hearing. To correctly change our thinking, we must study the Word of God, that is how our minds become renewed or reprogrammed. The Word of God instructs us to, “have the mind of Christ” in 1 Corinthians 2:16. The only way to have the mind of Christ is to study the Word, believe it in our heart, and act upon it.

Romans 12:1-2

Therefore, I urge you, brothers, in view of God's mercy, to offer your bodies as living sacrifices, holy and pleasing to God--**this is your spiritual act of worship. Do not conform any longer to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind. Then you will be able to test and approve what God's will is--his good, pleasing and perfect will.**

What an incredible verse of Scripture- Romans 12:1-2. The secret to sanctification, and a transformed life that knows the will of God is to renew our mind with God’s Word. Our lives are changed in proportion to our thinking being changed. A renewed mind thinks like God thinks, and therefore knows God’s will as stated in 3 John 2 (KJV) *“Beloved, I wish above all things that you may prosper and be in health, even as your soul prospers.”* That is how we will imitate our heavenly Father- Ephesians 5:1.

Greek Definitions:

Transformed:

metamorphoo, met-am-or-fo'-o; from G3326 and G3445; to transform (lit. or fig. “metamorphose”):--change, transfigure, transform.

Renewing:

anakainosis, an-ak-ah'ee-no-sis; from G341; renovation:--renewing, restore.



Ephesians 4:22-24

You were taught, with regard to your former way of life, to put off your old self, which is being corrupted by its deceitful desires; to be made new in the attitude of your minds; and to put on the new self, created to be like God in true righteousness and holiness.

Colossians 3:9-10

Do not lie to each other, since you have taken off your old self with its practices and have put on the new self, which is being renewed in knowledge in the image of its Creator.

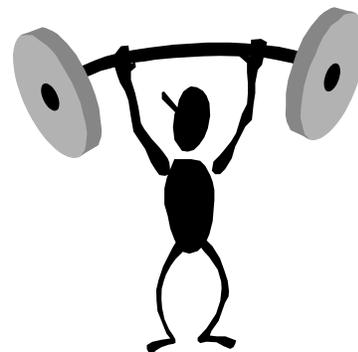
Jesus said in John 8:31-32, *“If you hold to my teaching, you are really my disciples. Then you will know the truth, and the truth will set you free.”* We as believers will continue to experience more freedom in our lives as we meditate and study God’s Word so our minds will become renewed to think like God does. It’s tragic to think, how so many of God’s children are in bondage to wrong thinking that causes them to live below their rights and privileges in Christ. Misinformation has been the root cause of failure for many throughout the ages.

**Wrong Hearing = Wrong Thinking = Wrong Believing =
Wrong Confessing = Wrong Receiving!**

4. Believe with our Head or with our Heart

This subject alone has confused and defeated many Christians throughout the ages concerning the Biblical operation of faith. Mental assent has been called the, “devil’s counterfeit” to true Bible believing faith. A simple definition of faith is: To act on what we believe. The purpose of this particular study is to differentiate between acting out of head knowledge or heart faith. When facing life’s problems, it will be critical for us to know the difference in order to be effective in moving the mountains of problems out of our lives. Before we go too deep into this particular study, I would like to point out few practical pointers about operating in the Law of Faith.

Faith can be compared to the human muscle in that it needs to be developed through diet and exercise. Diet, being a steady intake of God’s Word and exercise through putting that Word into practice and confessing it out of our mouth. The human body is comprised of thousands of different muscles. It requires many different kinds of exercises to develop each muscle that is located all over the body. Just because we can bench press 250 pounds does not mean we can curl 100 pounds unless we have developed those muscles.



Just because we have great faith for healing does not mean we have great faith for prosperity unless we have developed those faith muscles. The principles of faith are akin to physical development, but the application is different.



In the natural, in order to lift a certain amount of weight, a certain amount of muscle tissue in the right place is required to lift that weight. We may have successfully used our faith to believe for healing over a cold; however, there may not be sufficient faith muscle present to eradicate cancer.

Therefore, there are two pitfalls for us to avoid:

- 1) Don't try to believe beyond our current level or measure of faith in a particular area- Romans 12:3; 2 Corinthians 10:15; 2 Thessalonians 1:3.
- 2) Don't count on strong faith in one area of life to automatically make us strong in other areas.

Overloading Our Faith Will Result In Disappointment & Failure!

Believing With Our Head- Mental Assent Defined:

Mental assent can be simply defined as pre-mature faith in the form of head knowledge, accented by doubts in the mind. Contrast that with Bible faith of the heart that is fully persuaded- Romans 4:21. Just as every human being operates in natural human faith, we all mentally ascend to all kinds of historical information. However, there is a big difference between acquiescing to a bunch of information in our head, and having revelation knowledge in our heart. When in school, we all had occasions when we crammed for an exam to only forget it all later. That is mental assent, a superficial, temporary, swallow possession of knowledge that has little affect on one's life.

We go to Church on Sunday, and hear the message, but usually by the next week, we have forgotten most of what we had heard. Most people retain only 10% of what they hear, but over 90% of what they put into practice. Mental assent is very passive, it is simply mental agreement or acknowledging what we hear as it goes in one ear and out the other. Faith on the other hand puts that Word into practice in the form of confession and corresponding action. As result, that Word passes from the head to the heart. The absolute test in order to determine whether a Bible truth is in our head or in our heart, is to examine our life. Are you putting it into consistent practice according to James 1:22-25?

Love is of the heart, but knowledge is of the head. Let me give you a good example. A believer sits in Church, and hears from God's Word that it is God's will for him to be healed from all physical infirmity. He acknowledges this as truth but stops there. Months pass, and he is diagnosed with cancer, he recalls having heard something about God's will concerning healing. Without any foundation of God's Word in his heart he sets off to stand on God's Word for his physical hearing, but he does not have faith for healing- the Word is not in his heart on this subject. He only believes in his head that he is healed, and not in his heart- Mark 11:23-24. Unfortunately he dies from cancer, and the casual observer comments, "That guy believed he was going to be healed, but died. I guess it just was not God's will for him to be healed."

It was God's will for him to be healed all right, God's Word makes that truth very plain. This dear brother, loved by God, simply failed to get the Word of Promise concerning healing into his heart through meditation and acting on it. He only had a head knowledge that passively acknowledged a Bible fact instead of operating out of Biblical revelation, and thus releasing the force of faith out of his heart.

1 Corinthians 8:1-3

Now about food sacrificed to idols: We know that we all possess knowledge. Knowledge puffs up, but love builds up. The man who thinks he knows something does not yet know as he ought to know. But the man who loves God is known by God.

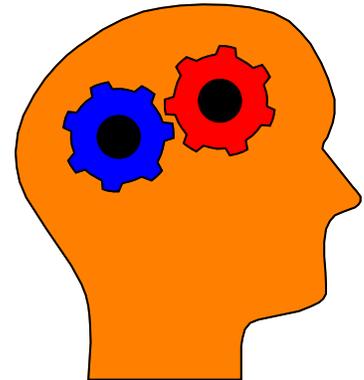


Illustration #1: The Seven Sons Of Sceva

Acts 19: 11-17

God did extraordinary miracles through Paul, so that even handkerchiefs and aprons that had touched him were taken to the sick, and their illnesses were cured and the evil spirits left them. Some Jews who went around driving out evil spirits tried to invoke the name of the Lord Jesus over those who were demon-possessed.

They would say, “*In the name of Jesus, whom Paul preaches, I command you to come out.*” Seven sons of Sceva, a Jewish chief priest, were doing this. One day the evil spirit answered them, “*Jesus I know, and I know about Paul, but who are you?*” Then the man who had the evil spirit jumped on them and overpowered them all. He gave them such a beating that they ran out of the house naked and bleeding. When this became known to the Jews and Greeks living in Ephesus, they were all seized with fear, and the name of the Lord Jesus was held in high honor.

Here we see seven zealots attempting to use the “Name of Jesus” as though it was some lucky charm to bring deliverance to a demon possessed man. They were not born again, they had no spiritual right to use that Name, and the devil knew it. They simply had heard that Christians would use the “Name of Jesus” and get results. Well, presumptuously, they also gave it a whirl, and got a royal thrashing by the demon instead.

As we can see, mental assent will get us nowhere in the spiritual world. Paul, however, had years of walking with God, and exercising his faith to the point where extraordinary miracles were operating through his ministry. The seven sons of Sceva had absolutely no faith at all in the use of the Name of Jesus. Until we get the Word of God in our hearts on that subject, we will be as powerless to use that Name as the seven sons of Sceva were. Watch out for second hand information, we must have a personal revelation of God's Word in our hearts for it to produce in our lives.

Illustration #2: Doubting Thomas

John 20: 24-29

Now Thomas (called Didymus), one of the Twelve, was not with the disciples when Jesus came. So the other disciples told him, “We have seen the Lord!” But he said to them, **“Unless I see the nail marks in his hands and put my finger where the nails were, and put my hand into his side, I will not believe it.”**

A week later his disciples were in the house again, and Thomas was with them. Though the doors were locked, Jesus came and stood among them and said, “Peace be with you!” Then he said to Thomas, “Put your finger here; see my hands. Reach out your hand and put it into my side. Stop doubting and believe.” Thomas said to him, “My Lord and my God!” Then Jesus told him, “Because you have seen me, you have believed; blessed are those who have not seen and yet have believed.”

Here is another form of mental assent which is based on sense knowledge. Our natural minds depend on our five senses to relay information to us concerning the natural world. To our intellect, these natural impulses are perceived, and interpreted as fact- as an authority concerning reality. For some, if they can't taste, smell, feel, hear or see it, then it must not be real. But even in the natural this is not always true. Radio waves, microorganisms, and atoms cannot be detected by our five senses, but they are still a reality in this natural realm.

Even though Jesus referred to His death, burial and resurrection time and time again, the disciples still did not believe it. After the resurrection of Jesus, Thomas was not personally there to see the Savior when He had appeared to the disciples in the upper room. When Thomas heard that Jesus was indeed alive, his natural mind dismissed it. He, like most people were so trained by the world system to rely solely upon the intellect- the natural mind, Romans 8:5-8. His heart was void of any faith concerning all the prophecies that depicted Jesus' resurrection in graphic detail. He could have meditated on them until they became so real in his heart that he knew what the outcome was going to be, and praise God in advance for it.

He said to them, “How foolish you are, and how slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken! Did not the Christ have to suffer these things and then enter his glory?”

And beginning with Moses and all the Prophets, he explained to them what was said in all the Scriptures concerning himself.

Luke 24:25-27

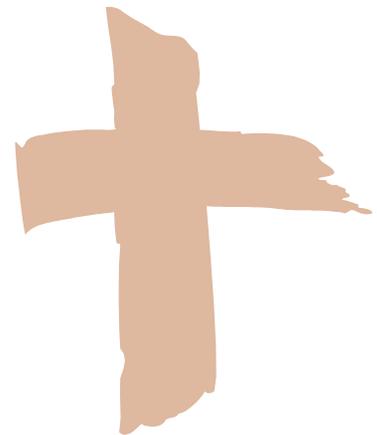


Illustration #3: The Confused Pharisee

John 3:1-4

Now there was a man of the Pharisees named Nicodemus, a member of the Jewish ruling council. He came to Jesus at night and said, “Rabbi, we know you are a teacher who has come from God. For no one could perform the miraculous signs you are doing if God were not with him.” In reply Jesus declared, “I tell you the truth, no one can see the kingdom of God unless he is born again.” “How can a man be born when he is old?” Nicodemus asked. “Surely he cannot enter a second time into his mother's womb to be born!”

Here we have a well educated religious leader who had Bible knowledge concerning the coming of the Messiah. By the signs Nicodemus had observed, he had concluded that Jesus could possibly be the promised Messiah. Unfortunately, his mind went tilt when Jesus spoke to his heart with spiritual truths concerning the Kingdom of God. The Pharisee's mind was so religiously programmed that the door to his heart was shut tight. His natural mind was obligated to figure everything out, but it just resulted in confusion. Like the Greek philosophers that Paul preached the gospel to, their response was, “*What is this babbling trying to say?*” Acts 17:18; Luke 10:21, see also Acts 16:14-15; 13:48.

John 3:9-10, 12

“How can this be?” Nicodemus asked. “You are Israel's teacher,” said Jesus, “and do you not understand these things? I have spoken to you of earthly things and you do not believe; how then will you believe if I speak of heavenly things?”

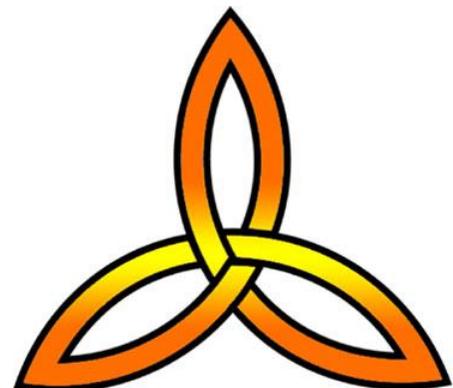
Human reasoning is the mental faculty that processes the evidence detected by the five senses. With this evidence, reason deducts a logical course of action or decision based on pre-existing experience or knowledge. This would be the proper approach to operating in the natural world, in order to make rational decisions that result in proper actions- also known as common sense. However, when we allow our minds to reason out a spiritual encounter with God and His Word, we will end up in the same boat of confusion as Nicodemus was in. The solution is to renew our minds through Bible meditation until it thinks in harmony with God's Word, and allows us to walk in the Spirit and not in the flesh.

The Tricotomy Of Man:

1 Thessalonians 5:23

May God himself, the God of peace, sanctify you through and through. May your whole spirit, soul and body be kept blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

**I Am A Spirit, I Have A
Soul, And I Live In A Body**



You Are A Spirit: **Philippians 1:21-25; James 2:26**
You Have A Soul: **1 Peter 2:11; Hebrews 4:12**
You Live In A Body: **2 Corinthians 5:1**

Here are some dictionary definitions from,
“The New Shorter Oxford English Dictionary-
Clarendon Press- Oxford”.



You Are A Spirit:

Conscience Is The Voice Of The Human Spirit

Conscience- “One’s inmost thought, one’s mind or heart. An inward knowledge or consciousness. Internal conviction or belief. A moral sense of right or wrong. Sense of responsibility felt for private or public actions, motives. The faculty or principle that leads to the approval of right thought or action and condemnation of wrong.”

Heart- “A central part; a vital or essential part. The center, middle, or inner most part of anything.”

You Have A Spirit:

The Soul Is Comprised Of The Mind, Will & Emotions

Reason (The Voice Of The Mind)- “The mental faculty which is used in adapting thought or action to some end. The guiding principle of the human mind in the process of thinking. A factor or circumstance forming a motive sufficient to lead a person to adopt or reject some course of action, belief, etc. Thinking in a connected or logical manner; use one’s reason in forming conclusions that embraces or drives them off- deduction and logic.”

Emotions- “Any natural instinctive affections of the mind which come, and go according to one’s personality, experiences, and bodily state. Passions expressed through the body. Mental feeling as distinguished from intellect and from will- Motivation, temperament, disposition, or state of expression.”

Will- “Inclination to do as passing into the senses. The action of willing or deciding to do something; the exercising of the mind with conscience intention towards initiating a chosen action. Intention, purpose, determination. A drive, a deliberate or fixed desire. The faculty by which a person exercises his or her capacity for initiating conscious and intentional action; power of choice in regard to action. Control over one’s will; self-control; degree of deliberate imposition of this over instinct or impulse.”

Intellect- “Perception, discernment, meaning. The faculty of knowing and reasoning; power of thought, and retaining knowledge, facts and experiences. Understanding analytical intelligence; mental faculties. The comprehension and assimilating of knowledge into memory by which recall, and retention is operative.”

You Live In A Body:

Feelings Is The Voice Of The Human Body

Senses- Physical faculties of perception or sensation. Sight, hearing, smell, taste and touch, by which humans and animals are able to perceive external physical objects and stimuli. Ability to feel or detect the presence of an object or stimuli- pain, irritation or pleasure.

Believing With Your Heart- The Testimony Of Faith:

Romans 4:1

What then shall we say that Abraham, our forefather, discovered in this matter?

Abraham is known as the father of our faith. Through his faith in God, salvation has come into the world. The name "Abraham" means, "The father of many nations." God formed the nation of Israel out of him through his son Isaac. Through the Jewish people, God brought Jesus to the earth to fulfill His great plan of redemption. What was it that Abraham did that was so incredible, he simply believed God, he took God at His Word- *"What does the Scripture say? Abraham believed God, and it was credited to him as righteousness."*

In spite of impossible circumstances, he took God at His Word and became the father of many nations Romans 4:17. Abraham's faith opened the door for God's grace to be poured out into his life, and into the entire world itself.

Romans 4:18-21

Against all hope, Abraham in hope believed and so became the father of many nations, just as it had been said to him, "So shall your offspring be." Without weakening in his faith, he faced the fact that his body was as good as dead-since he was about a hundred years old- and that Sarah's womb was also dead. Yet he did not waver through unbelief regarding the promise of God, but was strengthened in his faith and gave glory to God, being fully persuaded that God had power to do what he had promised.

Abraham walked by faith and not by sight- 2 Corinthians 5:7. This heart faith caused him to:

- 1) He did not waver regarding the promise of God
- 2) He was strengthened in his faith by giving glory to God
- 3) He was fully persuaded that God had the power to do what he had promised

Hebrews 6:13-19

When God made his promise to Abraham, since there was no one greater for him to swear by, he swore by himself, saying, "I will surely bless you and give you many descendants." And so after waiting patiently, Abraham received what was promised.

Men swear by someone greater than themselves, and the oath confirms what is said and puts an end to all argument. Because God wanted to make the unchanging nature of his purpose very clear to the heirs of what was promised, he confirmed it with an oath. God did this so that, by two unchangeable things in which it is impossible for God to lie, we who have fled to take hold of the hope offered to us may be greatly encouraged. We have this hope as an anchor for the soul, firm and secure.

Faith In God's Word Is The Anchor For My Soul!



What does heart faith produce within a person. Well, one thing for sure, we know by Thomas and Nicodemus what it does not produce. Bible believing faith operating within the heart of a believer, produces a sense of being fully persuaded, having reliance, assurance and confidence in what God says in His Word; regardless of what the five senses, and reasoning faculties may say about it. We can identify a believer who is operating out of this kind of heart faith by the following signs:

A supernatural **boldness** in the face of insurmountable odds: David & Goliath- **1 Samuel 17:45**

Such a **peace** that boggles the imagination: Elisha and the chariots of fire- **2 Kings 6:17**

A **confidence** that holds onto the end: Abraham receiving the promise- **Hebrews 11:11-13**

Hebrews 11:32-40

And what more shall I say? I do not have time to tell about Gideon, Barak, Samson, Jephthah, David, Samuel and the prophets, who through faith conquered kingdoms, administered justice, and gained what was promised; who shut the mouths of lions, quenched the fury of the flames, and escaped the edge of the sword; whose weakness was turned to strength; and who became powerful in battle and routed foreign armies. Women received back their dead, raised to life again. Others were tortured and refused to be released, so that they might gain a better resurrection. Some faced jeers and flogging, while still others were chained and put in prison.

They were stoned ; they were sawed in two; they were put to death by the sword. They went about in sheepskins and goatskins, destitute, persecuted and mistreated- the world was not worthy of them. They wandered in deserts and mountains, and in caves and holes in the ground. These were all commended for their faith, yet none of them received what had been promised. God had planned something better for us so that only together with us would they be made perfect.

If we are not displaying these characteristics or fruits of faith in our lives, then on the authority of God's Word, I can say that we are not believing God's Word in our hearts as they did. The Word is still in our heads, and that is why we have not seen any change in the mountain. So let us keep meditating on the Scriptures until that incorruptible seed gets into our spirit man and germinates. In a process of time the manifestation of the promise will come forth, and push that mountain out of the way- so be encouraged Galatians 6:9; Hebrews 6:12; 10: 23, 36-39.

It would be important for me to clarify something right now. Some of you may think I am coming across, kind of arrogant with this faith business. This boldness and confidence which is produced in our heart through faith is just that, it is because of faith. This is not some phony acting or pretense made out of emotion, and superficial sensationalism. This is not arrogance, conceit or presumption, but a supernatural grace that is released through faith to make us victorious in life for His glory! Simply study the life of Jesus, He is the greatest man of faith of all time!

Faith In The Heart Produces Boldness, Peace & Confidence!

5. The Enemies of Faith

There are enemies in this hostile world, that are bent on destroying our faith. We could write an entire book on the subject. For time sake, we will focus our study on three main ones: fear, doubt and unbelief. These are Satan's main weapons that are designed to undermine, and destroy our faith in God. Let us now disclose these enemies, and discover some Biblical strategies in order to overcome them

2 Corinthians 2:11

In order that Satan might not outwit us. For we are not unaware of his schemes.

Three Kinds Of Fear:

Fear is a paralyzing force that holds people in a helpless grip of torment. It is of the devil, and is part of his arsenal to destroy mankind- fear is simply faith in the devil. When I looked up the Greek meaning of fear in my Vines Expository Dictionary, I discovered that there are many renderings, and applications in the Bible concerning the subject of fear. Everything ranging from a good kind of fear that speaks of a reverential, respect, and awe of God to a diabolical type that comes straight from the pit of hell.

A) Terror

There are three types of fear that I would like to explore with you. The first one is the type of fear that we are all familiar with. It is the kind of fear that causes flight, dread and terror. Most people would operate in this kind of fear if they saw a shark coming after them- 1 John 4:18, *“But perfect love drives out fear, because fear has to do with punishment. The one who fears is not made perfect in love.”*

5401. phobos, fob'-os;
from a prim. phebomai
(to be put in fear); alarm
or fright:--be afraid, +
exceedingly, fear, terror.



Faith And A Life Of Obedience Go Hand In Hand!

Matthew 8:23-27

Then he got into the boat and his disciples followed him. Without warning, a furious storm came up on the lake, so that the waves swept over the boat. But Jesus was sleeping. The disciples went and woke him, saying, “Lord, save us! We're going to drown!” He replied, **“You of little faith, why are you so afraid?”** Then he got up and rebuked the winds and the waves, and it was completely calm. The men were amazed and asked, “What kind of man is this? Even the winds and the waves obey him!”

If anybody but Jesus had said, “You of little faith, why are you so afraid...” people would say, “Who do you think you are? What is the matter with you? You proud, arrogant person, I would like to see how you would fare in their position!” Does that sound familiar? This is how the world thinks, and many religious Christians who have a form of godliness, but deny the power. They reserve that kind of faith to Jesus only; however, they forget the Scripture in John 14:12, *“I tell you the truth, anyone who has faith in me will do what I have been doing. He will do even greater things than these, because I am going to the Father.”* This kind of faith is not outside our reach. God would be unjust to tell us to do something knowing full well that it could never be done- 1 John 2:6.

In the natural it was normal for the disciples of Jesus to be afraid of dying, and in their opinion they were not too far from it at the time. But suddenly they remembered that Jesus was in the boat, only to find him SLEEPING! Faith rests in the midst of a trial, while everyone else is running around like a chicken with its head cut off saying, “What are we going to do! What are we going to do! We have had it this time, if only I had stayed home and been a good little Christian.” I tell you what I am going to do, I am going to release my faith in God through His Word and say, “Greater is he that is in me than he that is in the world” 1 John 4:4 or “The Lord is my helper; I will not be afraid. What can man do to me ” in Psalms 118:6-7. Speak the Word to the storms of life, stand and see the salvation of God. Some may say, “Easier said than done!” However, when God’s Word gets rooted in our spirit, responding by faith becomes instinctive; that is the secret, like a sponge, when squeezed, what’s inside comes out.

Notice what Jesus said concerning the fear they gave into, “You of little faith, why are you so afraid?” Did you know that there is no excuse to give into fear. In other words fear is a temptation to sin, just like any other temptation. People in the natural excuse fear as a normal part of living, but you never saw Jesus running away in terror over anything; nor did He excuse it by saying, “it’s okay to be afraid, I get afraid too sometimes.” No, Jesus never said something like that! Faith is the opposite of fear. Faith produces a holy boldness and courage that will face any problem, any crisis, and tear into it with the sword of the Spirit, the Word of God.

You are her true daughters if you do what is right and let nothing terrify you- not giving way to fear or hysteria, letting anxieties unnerve you.

1 Peter 3:6 AMP

And everything that does not come from faith is sin.

Romans 14:23

The disciples had more faith in the devil being able to destroy them than they did in Jesus being able to save them. We need to resist fear as we do the devil, because fear is of the devil as faith is of God. Faith comes by hearing the words of God as fear comes by hearing the words of the devil. Just as the Scriptures say in Daniel 11:32, *“But the people that do know their God shall be strong, and do exploits.”* What is the key to walking in this realm of faith that God has called His children to in Psalms 119:148, *“My eyes stay open through the watches of the night, that I may meditate on your promises.”*

B) Intimidation

The next kind of fear is really going to take you by surprise. This is type of fear is quite different from the kind of fear listed above. It is best understood as a kind of fear that produces feelings of intimidation, and manipulation. Like that of an adversary assigned to destroy you. Satan will use people, not just the ungodly, but religious people who profess to love God to be a thorn in your flesh. Under the guise of straightening you out, they will make it their personal ambition to make life a trial for you. When under this kind of an attack from the enemy, these people will resemble Job’s comforters. They are more of a hindrance than a help.

Intimidation is a powerful tool of the enemy to manipulate, and force people into submission. The devil is just a big bully who bluffs his way into the lives of believers in order to discourage them from believing God. The kind of fear we are addressing here, is the kind of fear that is exerted by peer pressure or public opinion. This kind of fear probably affects politicians and other leaders the most. This kind of fear is a cowardly and timid kind of fear that has no backbone, but gives into pressure, because it is afraid of what others will think. This kind of fear is very insipid, spineless, and lukewarm kind of fearfulness that is sickening to look at.

1167. deilia, di-lee'-ah;
from G1169;
timidity:--fear.

1169. deilos, di-los'; from
deos (dread); timid,
i.e. (by impl.)
faithless:- fearful.



1 Samuel 13:7-14

Saul remained at Gilgal, and all the troops with him were quaking with fear. He waited seven days, the time set by Samuel; but Samuel did not come to Gilgal, and Saul's men began to scatter. So he said, “Bring me the burnt offering and the fellowship offerings.” And Saul offered up the burnt offering. Just as he finished making the offering, Samuel arrived, and Saul went out to greet him. “What have you done?” asked Samuel. Saul replied, “When I saw that the men were scattering, and that you did not come at the set time, and that the Philistines were assembling at Micmash, I thought, ‘Now the Philistines will come down against me at Gilgal, and I have not sought the Lord’s favor.’

So I felt compelled to offer the burnt offering.” “You acted foolishly,” Samuel said. “You have not kept the command the LORD your God gave you; if you had, he would have established your kingdom over Israel for all time. But now your kingdom will not endure; the LORD has sought out a man after his own heart and appointed him leader of his people, because you have not kept the Lord’s command.”

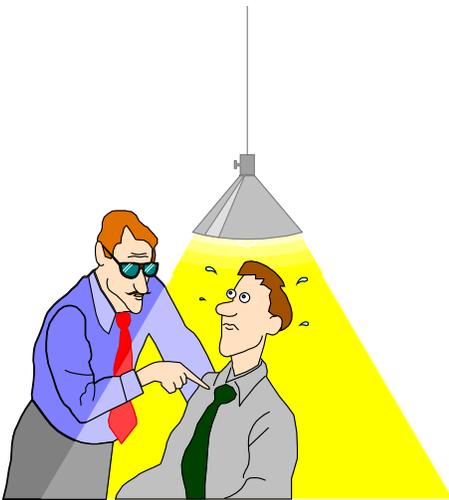
What a lot of people think is humility is actually fear, and sheepish submission to other folks manipulative plans. In 1 Samuel 10:20-24, Saul hid from the people when they wanted to anoint him as king over Israel. He was destined for failure from the very beginning. The fear of intimidation produces compromise, and will always result in failure. Faith on the other hand will produce a supernatural courage, boldness, confidence, peace, and joy to face any difficult situation. That does not mean that walking by faith gives us a license to be pushy, arrogant, and always insisting on our own way. It does mean however, that through God’s power we will not let the devil make a door mat out of us or another victim.

1 Samuel 15:13-26

When Samuel reached him, Saul said, “The LORD bless you! I have carried out the Lord’s instructions.” But Samuel said, “What then is this bleating of sheep in my ears? What is this lowing of cattle that I hear?” Saul answered, “The soldiers brought them from the Amalekites; they spared the best of the sheep and cattle to sacrifice to the LORD your God, but we totally destroyed the rest.” “Stop!”

Samuel said to Saul. “Let me tell you what the LORD said to me last night.” “Tell me,” Saul replied. Samuel said, “Although you were once small in your own eyes, did you not become the head of the tribes of Israel? The LORD anointed you king over Israel. And he sent you on a mission, saying, ‘Go and completely destroy those wicked people, the Amalekites; make war on them until you have wiped them out.’ Why did you not obey the LORD? Why did you pounce on the plunder and do evil in the eyes of the LORD?” “But I did obey the LORD,” Saul said. “I went on the mission the LORD assigned me. I completely destroyed the Amalekites and brought back Agag their king. The soldiers took sheep and cattle from the plunder, the best of what was devoted to God, in order to sacrifice them to the LORD your God at Gilgal.”

But Samuel replied: “Does the LORD delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices as much as in obeying the voice of the LORD? To obey is better than sacrifice, and to heed is better than the fat of rams. For rebellion is like the sin of divination, and arrogance like the evil of idolatry. Because you have rejected the word of the LORD, he has rejected you as king.” Then Saul said to Samuel, “I have sinned. I violated the Lord's command and your instructions. I was afraid of the people and so I gave in to them. Now I beg you, forgive my sin and come back with me, so that I may worship the LORD.” But Samuel said to him, “I will not go back with you. You have rejected the word of the LORD, and the LORD has rejected you as king over Israel!”



Notice what Saul said, “*I was afraid of the people and so I gave in to them.*” Unfortunately, it cost him his kingdom. Being a man pleaser is just not worth the price. When we cave into peer pressure, it will cost us. The fear of intimidation will drive us to act presumptuously, and give into pressure from people. Like the parable of the sower in Mark 4:17, “*But since they have no root, they last only a short time. When trouble or persecution comes because of the word, they quickly fall away.*” Get so full of the Word that you become bold as a lion in the face of opposition- Acts 4:23-31. Faith and a life of obedience go hand in hand.

The fear of intimidation that produces cowardliness and timidity will actually prevent people from accepting Jesus as Lord or cause people to backslide. This is serious stuff, and should not be taken lightly. This spiritual force of fear is rampant in this world, and has caused many people to go to hell, because they have yielded to it- John 7:12-13. The following story comes from John 9:13-34, I encourage you to read the whole story. Here is a man who stands up to the Pharisees, and receives Jesus as his personal Lord and Savior. Unfortunately, his parents made the decision that belonging to the synagogue was more important than salvation.

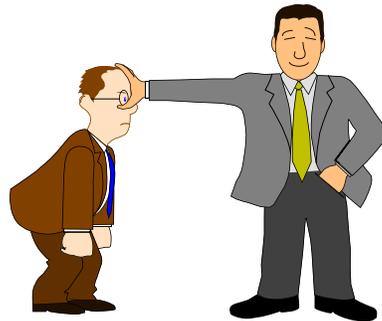
John 9:18-23

The Jews still did not believe that he had been blind and had received his sight until they sent for the man's parents. "Is this your son?" they asked. "Is this the one you say was born blind? How is it that now he can see?" "We know he is our son," the parents answered, "and we know he was born blind. But how he can see now, or who opened his eyes, we don't know. Ask him. He is of age; he will speak for himself." His parents said this because they were afraid of the Jews, for already the Jews had decided that anyone who acknowledged that Jesus was the Christ would be put out of the synagogue. That was why his parents said, "He is of age; ask him."

If You Do Not Stand Firm In Your Faith, You Will Not Stand At All! Isaiah7:9

For God did not give us a spirit of timidity-of cowardice, of craven and cringing and fawning fear- but a spirit of power, of love and of calm and well-balanced and discipline and self-discipline.

2 Timothy 1:7 AMP



Hebrews 10:35-39

So do not throw away your confidence; it will be richly rewarded. You need to persevere so that when you have done the will of God, you will receive what he has promised. For in just a very little while, "He who is coming will come and will not delay. But my righteous one will live by faith. And if he shrinks back, I will not be pleased with him." But we are not of those who shrink back and are destroyed, but of those who believe and are saved.

Revelations 21:8

"But the cowardly (Fearful), the unbelieving, the vile, the murderers, the sexually immoral, those who practice magic arts, the idolaters and all liars-their place will be in the fiery lake of burning sulfur. This is the second death."

C) Anxiety and Worry

The last type of fear we are going to study is just as deadly as the other two described above. However, this kind fear is much more subtle and deceptive than the other two. Most people would not even consider it as fear. However, anxiety and worry are the tormenting twins of mother fear. They have ruined countless lives, and is the root cause of many ulcers, and various illnesses. They rob people of joy, and peace and have brought down many people to an early grave.

1 Peter 5:7 AMP

Casting the whole of your care- all your anxieties, all your worries, all your concerns, once and for all- on Him; for He cares for you affectionately, and cares about you watchfully.

Care:

3308. merimna, mer'-im-nah; from G3307 (through the idea of distraction); solicitude:--care.

Vine's Expository Dictionary: To draw in different directions, to distract. Caused by a care, especially an anxious care. This Greek word conveys the thought of anxiety. A *distracting care*. To get our eyes off of Jesus- Peter and the waves!

A believer who embraces anxiety, and cares has fallen into a snare of the devil. It is a choice that we make just like yielding to any other sin, the devil can't make us do it. He can only offer an invitation- **SLAM THE DOOR IN HIS FACE!**



It is so sad to see people in this world groping around in the kingdom of darkness, full of fear and anxiety. What a miserable existence to live without Jesus. People are so accustomed to this lifestyle that in their eyes, when they see believers walking by faith without a care or worry in the world, they think they have fallen off the deep end. We are accused of being irresponsible and living in a dream world. They are half right, for life with Jesus is a dream come true. For Jesus is my burden bearer, and His yoke is easy, and His burden is light!

I am not saying that once we become a Christian, we will float through life on flowery beds of ease. Psalm 34:19 says, "***A righteous man may have many troubles, but the LORD delivers him from them all***" The difference is that a believer gets to go through life with Jesus as more than a conqueror, reigning in life as a king in Christ Jesus- Romans 5:17; 8:37.

Worry Is Like A Rocking Chair- It Gives You Something To Do, But You Don't Get Anywhere!

Let's expound a little more on Vine's definition of anxiety- distracting cares. The purpose of anxiety is to get our eyes off of Jesus and His Word; that is where our answer is. If the devil can successfully get our eyes off of Jesus and onto some smoke screen, distracting cares, he will defeat us with the fear of anxiety and worry. The problems of life are sent to everyone, no one is exempt. Jesus said in John 10:10, "*The thief comes only to steal and kill and destroy; I have come that they may have life, and have it to the full.*" Therefore, let's obey this Word in 1 Peter 3:14-15, "*Do not fear what they fear ; do not be frightened. But set in your hearts Christ Jesus as Lord.*"

Matthew 14:23-32

After he had dismissed them, he went up on a mountainside by himself to pray. When evening came, he was there alone, but the boat was already a considerable distance from land, **buffeted by the waves because the wind was against it.** During the fourth watch of the night Jesus went out to them, walking on the lake. When the disciples saw him walking on the lake, they were terrified. "It's a ghost," they said, and cried out in fear. But Jesus immediately said to them: "Take courage! It is I. **Don't be afraid.**" "Lord, if it's you," Peter replied, "tell me to come to you on the water." "Come," he said. Then Peter got down out of the boat, walked on the water and came toward Jesus. **But when he saw the wind, he was afraid and, beginning to sink,** cried out, "Lord, save me!" Immediately Jesus reached out his hand and caught him. "You of little faith," he said, "why did you doubt?" And when they climbed into the boat, the wind died down.

The Amplified Bible says concerning Matthew 14:30, "*But when Peter perceived and felt the strong wind, he was frightened, and as he began to sink, he cried out, Lord, save me from death!*" Natural things are very real to our five senses, and they send a crisis alerts to our brain. Even though Peter did what anyone else would do in his situation, Jesus rebuked him for having little faith and for doubting. Peter did fine as long as he kept his eyes on Jesus, but he was being enticed by the surrounding circumstances. Unfortunately, he gave in and like Lot's wife, gave into the natural and looked. Peter became filled with fear and anxiety, and began to sink. He started out in faith by simple obedience to Jesus' words, but got distracted, and it nullified his faith. That is why the Bible says in 2 Corinthians 5:7 (KJV), "*We walk by faith, not by sight.*" The key is to get full of faith when there is no storm around. Therefore, when the storms of life do come, we will be ready for them- Matthew 26:41. If we wait until the storms of life come, we have waited too late.

Anxiety = Distracting Cares

Have you ever seen a person who was trapped in the pit of anxiety and worry. They were tormented day and night about things that had not even happened yet. The enemy has filled their minds with all kinds of imaginations, story lines, and "What if" situations to terrorize them. The devil is a liar, a deceiver, he does not play fair. He will take advantage of any opportunity afforded him by our lack of knowledge of God's Word. When we give into this evil snare, it will plunge us into a sea of turmoil, and confusion that leads to hysteria and delirium- even insanity for some. The sad thing is, the whole thing is just a dumb mind game the devil tries to put people through. Have you noticed that the Bible is full of "Fear not," "Don't be afraid," and "Take courage" statements, because God is a faith God, not a fear God.

Proverbs 12:25 "An anxious heart weighs a man down, but a kind word cheers him up."

1674. de'agah, deh-aw-gaw'; from H1672; anxiety:--care (-fulness), fear, heaviness, sorrow.

Anxious cares are terrible weights and burdens to bear. Don't let the enemy rob you of your joy by being burdened down with worthless worry- resist him in the Name of Jesus!

Cast your cares on the LORD (Releasing the weight of it AMP) and he will sustain you; he will never let the righteous fall.

Psalm 55:22

Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything, by prayer and petition, with thanksgiving, present your requests to God.
Philippians 4:6



Remember, faith and fear are diametrically opposed to each other. They are two opposite extremes. It is easy to identify someone who is operating in faith or fear. Jesus walked on the water, not because He was the Son of God, but because He was walking by faith. Peter did the same thing, he walked on the water with the same faith as Jesus. However, Peter was walking with training wheels, and he fell down- just inexperienced. We can't expect to walk by faith perfectly, we will fall down, but sweet Jesus is there to rescue us when we call out for help. So don't give up when you make a mistake. You are not a failure just because you make mistakes, that is part of the learning process. We are only failures when we give up and quit.



When anxiety comes to attack, and lay siege to your mind, the solution is to fill your heart, and mind with the Word of God. The Word will become a wall of fire around you. Faith is our shield with which we extinguish the fiery darts of the evil one. We must take those thoughts captive with the Word according to 2 Corinthians 10:3-5. When people come to us and say, "take care," our response can be, "Jesus has and is doing a great job with them already."

Matthew 6:25-34

"Therefore I tell you, **do not worry about your life**, what you will eat or drink; or about your body, what you will wear. Is not life more important than food, and the body more important than clothes? Look at the birds of the air; they do not sow or reap or store away in barns, and yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not much more valuable than they? **Who of you by worrying can add a single hour to his life**? "And why do you worry about clothes? See how the lilies of the field grow. They do not labor or spin. Yet I tell you that not even Solomon in all his splendor was dressed like one of these.

If that is how God clothes the grass of the field, which is here today and tomorrow is thrown into the fire, will he not much more clothe you, **O you of little faith**? So do not worry, saying, 'What shall we eat?' or 'What shall we drink?' or 'What shall we wear?' For the pagans run after all these things, and your heavenly Father knows that you need them. But seek first his kingdom and his righteousness, and all these things will be given to you as well.

When we give into worry, we are saying to the Father God, "Father I'm sorry, but I just don't think you are competent to handle this one, I'm better off taking care of it myself." Or we might be saying, "Father I know you are just too busy to be bothered with this care, but after I have suffered enough, and am totally overwhelmed by it, I might turn this problem over to you then." God is no longer God in our lives if His children are tormented by turmoil, anxiety and worry. It is an insult to the Lord, and it makes Him look like a failure, because He has promised to sustain us, and put us over in every situation- but we won't let Him.

“I was young and now I am old, yet I have never seen the righteous forsaken or their children begging bread.” Psalm 37:35. We must resist worry like we do any other temptation to not trust God, and take His Word at face value. Listed below are some key Scriptures that will help direct you in aligning your thought life onto Jesus:

Therefore, holy brothers, who share in the heavenly calling, fix your thoughts on Jesus, the apostle and high priest whom we confess.

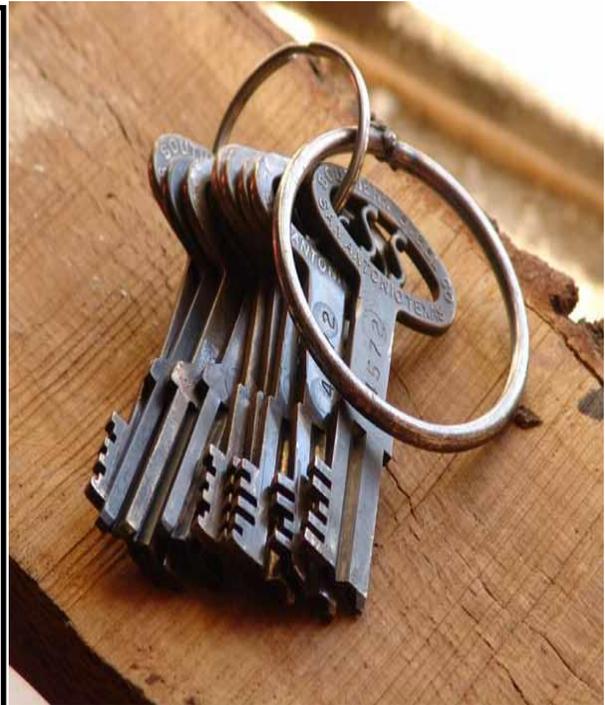
Hebrews 3:1

Since, then, you have been raised with Christ, set your hearts on things above, where Christ is seated at the right hand of God. Set your minds on things above, not on earthly things.

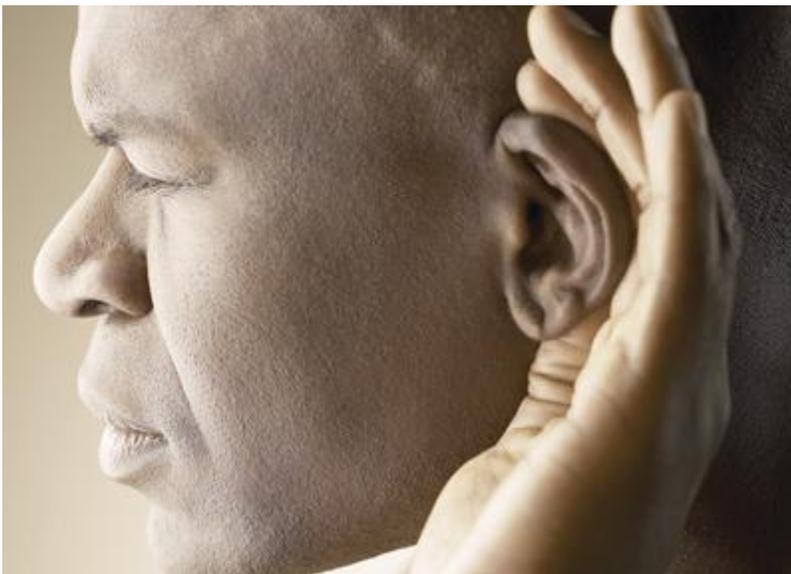
Colossians 3:1-2

Finally, brothers, whatever is true, whatever is noble, whatever is right, whatever is pure, whatever is lovely, whatever is admirable-if anything is excellent or praiseworthy-think about such things.

Philippians 4:8



Isaiah 26:3- You will keep in perfect peace him whose mind is steadfast, because he trusts in you.



Faith in God comes by hearing what God says. Then, on the other hand, faith in the devil comes by hearing the words of the devil. If we are always listening to the words of the devil, then we are probably wondering why we don't have any faith in God. Hearing the words of the devil produces fear. Faith is the substance of things hoped for or desired. So the opposite of faith is fear, which would be the substance of things not desired. Job 3:25,

“What I feared has come upon me; what I dreaded has happened to me.”

Job didn't just fear; he was highly was highly developed in it. The more highly developed we get in either our faith or in fear, the quicker the manifestation will come. The words we speak will either cause faith or fear to come depending on what we speak. Words transmit faith, but words can also transmit fear.

Doubt, The Double-Minded:

In our study concerning the enemies of faith, we come to our next adversary- doubt. This subtle enemy plants itself into the minds of believers in order to hinder the flow of faith from their hearts. Doubt creates an instability in our lives, to waver and hesitate in putting faith in God and His Word. Until we are rooted and grounded in the Word, and established in our heart concerning God's will, doubts will consciously or unconsciously, continue to hinder us in our faith walk.

1252. diakrino, dee-ak-ree'-no; from G1223 and G2919; to separate thoroughly, i.e. (lit. and reflex.) to withdraw from, or (by impl.) oppose; fig. to discriminate (by impl. decide), or (reflex.) hesitate:--contend, make (to) differ (-ence), discern, doubt, judge, be partial, stagger, waver.

1365. distazo, dis-tad'-zo; from G1364; prop. to duplicate, i.e. (ment.) to waver (in opinion):--doubt.

Here are a couple of Greek definitions for the word "Doubt." Vine's dictionary expounds on these Greek meanings by saying that doubt implies: Vacillating in opinion or purpose, being two-souled or double-minded- James 1:8; 4:8. The verb in James 1:6 suggests, not so much weakness of faith, as a lack of it. Perplexed- 2 Corinthians 4:8; Galatians 4:20. To stand in two ways- double standing, implying, "Uncertainty of which way to take"- Matthew 14:31; 28:17. Being anxious through a distracted state of mind of wavering between hope and fear. Live in careful suspense - Luke 12:29. Expresses reasoning, questioning, or hesitation- Romans 14:1

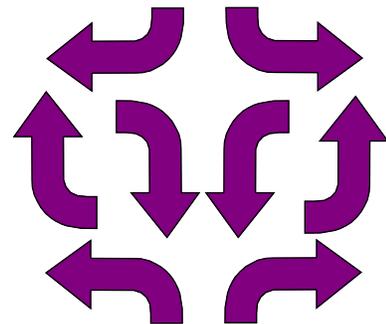
1 Kings 18:21

Elijah went before the people and said, "How long will you waver between two opinions? If the LORD is God, follow him; but if Baal is God, follow him." But the people said nothing.

What an incredible Bible story as depicted above- Elijah and the 450 prophets of Baal. All it takes is one man or woman to take God at His Word. Wavering between two opinions is a life of compromise void of the reality of God's power. Jesus is looking for believers that are not lukewarm, but on fire, full of faith and conviction.

When people have been duped by religion, and the philosophies of men, spiritual distortion, and confusion will set in. Doubt is a human condition that is too preoccupied with natural reasoning- Luke 24:38, "Jesus said to them, 'Why are you troubled, and why do doubts rise in your minds?'" The KJV uses the word "Thoughts" rather than "Doubts." The Greek for "Thoughts"- Debate, dispute, imagination, reasoning, thought, doubtful. Some people get so educated at the expense of their heart. They are so conditioned and trained to analyze everything, that

faith, and spiritual things are beyond their grasp to conceive or comprehend. The answer for them is to get their minds renewed, and re-programmed with the Word of God. This will cause their soul to come in agreement with their spirit which will usher them into spiritual concepts, truths and realities.



In Hebrews 7:7, NIV uses “Doubt” but KJV uses “Contradiction.” When doubts rise in our mind, often times they are thoughts from the enemy to contradict the truth of God’s Word. The devil is the father of lies, and they produce doubt and fear- resist him with the Word in Jesus’ Name.



Now the serpent was more crafty than any of the wild animals the LORD God had made. He said to the woman, “Did God really say, ‘You must not eat from any tree in the garden?’” The woman said to the serpent, “We may eat fruit from the trees in the garden, but God did say, ‘You must not eat fruit from the tree that is in the middle of the garden, and you must not touch it, or you will die.’” “You will not surely die,” the serpent said to the woman. “For God knows that when you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil.”

Genesis 3:1-5

Doubt- To Stagger Back And Forth & Waver In Opinion

Faith begins where the will of God is known and God’s Word is God’s will. So when we are struggling with doubts in our head, let’s flood our mind with God’s Word by meditating on the Scriptures until we become totally convinced concerning God’s will for our life. Since doubt is rooted in a lack of revelation from God’s Word on a given subject, let’s get full of the light of God’s Word- 1 John 1:5. As we grow up in Jesus, and His Word takes ascendancy in our lives, the devil will no longer be able to take advantage of our lack of knowledge.

Ephesians 4:14

Then we will no longer be infants, tossed back and forth by the waves, and blown here and there by every wind of teaching and by the cunning and craftiness of men in their deceitful scheming.

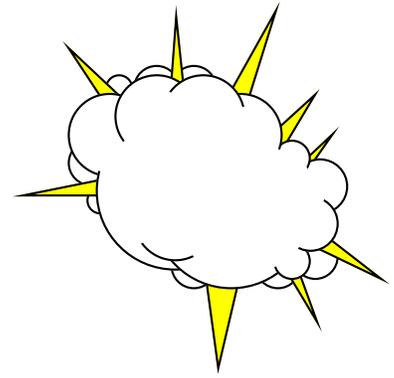
The Bible is very clear on this subject, and leaves no room for guess work. He who doubts will fail to receive God’s best in their life- Romans 14:23, “*But the man who has doubts is condemned if he eats, because his eating is not from faith; and everything that does not come from faith is sin.*” When it comes to believing God about a particular area in our lives, we will all start out with some doubts, but they must be eliminated by God’s Word if we are to expect to receive anything from God.

James 1:6-8

But when he asks, he must believe and not doubt, because he who doubts is like a wave of the sea, blown and tossed by the wind. That man should not think he will receive anything from the Lord; he is a double-minded man, unstable in all he does.

Matthew 14:31- "You of little faith, why did you doubt"
 Matthew 21:21- "Have faith and do not doubt"
 Mark 11:23 - "Does not doubt in his heart"
 James 1:6 - "He must believe and not doubt"

John 20:27 - "Stop doubting and believe"
 (KJV) - "Be not faithless but believing"



Here is something to consider, "Is it possible for us to believe in our heart, and yet have doubts in our head?" To quote an old-time minister, "You can't stop the birds from flying over your head, but you can keep them from building a nest in your hair." As we fight the good fight of faith, the enemy will attempt to overthrow our faith with a barrage of doubts. These deceptive attacks come through well meaning people, and supposedly legitimate sources- like the doctor's report.

However, as long as we hide God's Word in our hearts and walk by faith, and not by sight we will receive our every need met. We must continue to resist the temptation to give into doubt. As long as we resist it we have not sinned. One may ask, "How do we know if we have given into doubt?" If we fit the profile of James 1:6-8, then we have been sucked into the whirlpool of doubt. We need only to repent, and get into the Word until we have the assurance of faith in our heart. Doubt is simply a lack of faith; the more of God's Word that is hidden in our heart, the more faith will work in our life with less doubt!

James 4:8

Come near to God and he will come near to you. Wash your hands, you sinners, and purify your hearts, you double-minded.

Purify:
hagnizo, hag-nid'-zo; from G53; to make clean, i.e. (fig.) sanctify (cer. or mor.):--purity (self).

Heart:
2588. kardia, kar-dee'-ah; prol. from a prim. kar (Lat. cor, "heart"); the heart, i.e. (fig.) the thoughts or feelings (mind); also (by anal.) the middle:--(+ broken-) heart (-ed).

The cure for a double-minded believer is to purify his/her heart. For our convenience, I have listed the Greek meanings for the words, "Purify" and "Heart." If we make our minds clean, and sanctified through the washing with water through the Word (Ephesians 5:26), we can purge our soul from doubts. If we don't, we will be made subject to wavering, and staggering between two points of view- Bible and circumstances. As we renew (Romans 12:2) our minds through meditating on the promises of God (Joshua 1:8), we will become rooted and grounded in God's will for our lives, and nothing will be able to move us. Until then, we are vulnerable, exposed, and in danger of falling short of God's best for our lives. Beware of people, and things that seek to fill our minds with worry, and the cares of this world.

1 Timothy 5:22, "Do not share in the sins of others. Keep yourself pure." 1 Corinthians 15:33, "Do not be misled: 'Bad company corrupts good character.'" These ungodly influences will drain us of spiritual vitality until we are totally weak and drained. What's the use of listening and watching things that will only need to be flushed out of our mind later on; what a waste of time, I know this from personal experience.

Unbelief, The Sin Of Disobedience:

We have been saying that doubt is a condition that affects the soul area (mind, will and emotions), producing a double-minded wavering between believing God or the circumstances. Unbelief, is quite different in nature. It is a condition of the heart. It is a rebellious, disobedient, hardened, and callused heart that knows the will of God but stubbornly chooses to disobey it.

This condition is much more serious than doubt. Doubts are the result of a lack of knowledge, and God's Word in our heart, but unbelief knows the will of God, but still deliberately disobeys it- that person will never enter into God's rest according to the Scriptures.

Hebrews 3:7-13

So, as the Holy Spirit says: "Today, if you hear his voice, **do not harden your hearts** as you did in **the rebellion**, during the time of testing in the desert, where your fathers tested and tried me and for forty years saw what I did. That is why I was angry with that generation, and I said, '**Their hearts are always going astray, and they have not known my ways.**' So I declared on oath in my anger, 'They shall never enter my rest.'" See to it, brothers, that none of you has **a sinful, unbelieving heart that turns away from the living God.** But encourage one another daily, as long as it is called Today, so that none of you may be **hardened by sin's deceitfulness.**

Vine's Dictionary (Unbelief): **The condition of being unpersuadable, denoting obstinacy, obstinate rejection of the will of God, hence disobedience.**

Unbelief:

570. apistia, ap-is-tee'-ah; from G571; faithlessness, i.e. (neg.) disbelief (want of Chr. faith), or (pos.) unfaithfulness (disobedience):--unbelief.

571. apistos, ap'-is-tos; from G1 (as a neg. particle) and G4103; (act.) disbelieving, i.e. without Chr. faith (spec. a heathen); (pass.) untrustworthy (person), or incredible (thing):--that believeth not, faithless, incredible thing, infidel, unbeliever (-ing).

Unbelief:

543. apeitheia, ap-i'-thi-ah; from G545; disbelief (obstinate and rebellious):--disobedience, unbelief.

545. apeithes, ap-i-thace'; from G1 (as a neg. particle) and G3982; unpersuadable, i.e. contumacious:--disobedient.

The danger of folks persisting in unbelief is that they will find themselves cut off from God, and shut out from His power and provision for their lives. The nation of Israel often found itself in this precarious position. They had the law, and the commandments, but on the most part they rejected Jesus as their Messiah- Matthew 27:22-25. They had pursued a law of righteousness by works, and not by grace Romans 9:30-10:4.

Romans 11:11-23

Again I ask: Did they stumble so as to fall beyond recovery? Not at all! Rather, because of their transgression, salvation has come to the Gentiles to make Israel envious. But if **their transgression** means riches for the world, and their loss means riches for the Gentiles, how much greater riches will their fullness bring! I am talking to you Gentiles. Inasmuch as I am the apostle to the Gentiles, I make much of my ministry in the hope that I may somehow arouse my own people to envy and save some of them.

For if **their rejection** is the reconciliation of the world, what will their acceptance be but life from the dead? If the part of the dough offered as first fruits is holy, then the whole batch is holy; if the root is holy, so are the branches. **If some of the branches have been broken off**, and you, though a wild olive shoot, have been grafted in among the others and now share in the nourishing sap from the olive root, do not boast over those branches. If you do, consider this: You do not support the root, but the root supports you. You will say then, “Branches were broken off so that I could be grafted in.”

Granted. But they were **broken off because of unbelief, and you stand by faith**. Do not be arrogant, but be afraid. For if God did not spare the natural branches, he will not spare you either. Consider therefore the kindness and sternness of God: sternness to those who fell, but kindness to you, provided that you continue in his kindness. Otherwise, you also will be cut off. **And if they do not persist in unbelief**, they will be grafted in, for God is able to graft them in again.

The people of Israel had a reputation for being stubborn, and stiff-necked. Human nature from birth is bent on being self-willed and independent. One beautiful aspect of faith is that it embraces the whole area of trust in God, likened unto one falling back into the arms of Jesus- in the good times, and during times of trials. The root of unbelief is hardness of heart. Jesus told us to become like little children in order to inherit the Kingdom of God- to be born again according to Matthew 18:3.

From a spiritual context, the more we grow spiritually, the more dependent we become upon Jesus. It is only through abiding in Him and His Word (John 15), and maintaining the fellowship of the Spirit (Philippians 2:1), will we maintain a tender heart. Like David, who was a man after God’s heart. We must learn to be quick to forgive and quick to repent; lest we be hardened by sin’s deceitfulness.

1 John 3:19-22

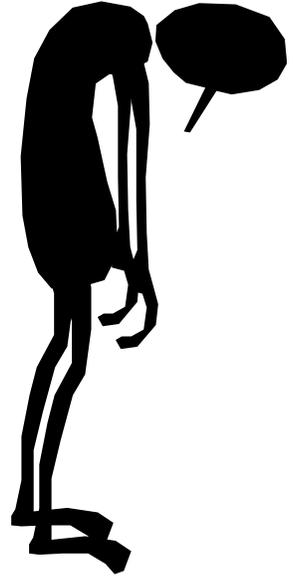
This then is how we know that we belong to the truth, and how we set our hearts at rest in his presence whenever our hearts condemn us. For God is greater than our hearts, and he knows everything. Dear friends, if our hearts do not condemn us, we have confidence before God and receive from him anything we ask, **because we obey his commands and do what pleases him**.

**Repentance And Obedience To God’s Word Is
The Cure For Unbelief!**

As has just been said: “Today, if you hear his voice, do not harden your hearts as you did in the rebellion.” Who were they who heard and rebelled? Were they not all those Moses led out of Egypt? And with whom was he angry for forty years? Was it not with those who sinned, whose bodies fell in the desert? And to whom did God swear that they would never enter his rest if not to those who disobeyed? So **we see that they were not able to enter, because of their unbelief.**

Therefore, since the promise of entering his rest still stands, let us be careful that none of you be found to have fallen short of it. For we also have had the gospel preached to us, just as they did; but the message they heard was of no value to them, because those who heard **did not combine it with faith.** Now we who have believed enter that rest, just as God has said, “So I declared on oath in my anger, ‘They shall never enter my rest.’”

Hebrews 3:15-4:3



Unit 10 Review:

What affect does “Right and Wrong” thinking have on our faith?

How do we “Renew” our mind and why is it so important?

Explain the difference between believing with your heart and mental ascent.

What is the “Tricotomy” of man- explain the parts?

List the three enemies of faith and how they affect our faith?

C. The Spirit of Faith

The previous lesson dealt with the, “Word of Faith” principles found in God’s Word. As we have just learned, the objective for these Biblical principles is to usher us into a place where faith is present in our heart- becoming fully persuaded. However, this is just the first part of a two part process. Just having faith in our heart is not enough. Faith has to be released and sustained in order to ensure a harvest.

Now we will cover the second part to the Law of Faith, called the “Spirit of Faith” according to the Bible. The “Spirit of Faith” begins where the “Word of Faith” has left off- one begins where the other ends. Once we have faith in our heart (thanks to meditating on God’s Word), it’s now time to release that faith into a positive confession that is consistent until the manifestation of the promise. The “Word of Faith” is a confession of God’s Word unto faith (to get faith into our spirit), but the “Spirit of Faith” is a confession that releases our faith from our spirit. In both cases, the Word of God is spoken out of our mouth, but the “Spirit of Faith” does not kick in until that Word of God has been planted in our spirit. At this point, the Word is coming out of our spirit, not our mind.

In summary, we first operate in the “Word of Faith” principles in order to get the Word down into our heart through speaking the Word. At some point, that Word gets into our heart, and is transformed into the “Spirit of Faith.” This spoken Word from our heart is what brings the promises of God into manifestation in our life and moves the mountains of circumstances out of the way.

Romans 10:8 **The Word Of Faith is a Confession Unto Faith**
But what does it say? “The word is near you; it is in your mouth and in your heart,” that is, the word of faith we are proclaiming.

2 Corinthians 4:13 **The Spirit Of Faith is a Confession Of Faith**
It is written: “I believed; therefore I have spoken.” With that same spirit of faith we also believe and therefore speak.

Word Of Faith:

- Faith Begins Where The Will Of God Is Known. Finding The Word Of Promise.
- Meditation Of God’s Word To Produce Faith (Seed) In The Heart Of Man.
- The Process Of Renewing The Mind, And Removing Doubts & Fears.
- The Seed Of God’s Word Has Been Planted And Is Ready For Germination.

Spirit Of Faith:

God’s Will Is Already Ascertained Through The Revelation Of God’s Word In The Heart.

Confession Of Faith From The Heart Is Now Directed To The Mountain Of Circumstances.

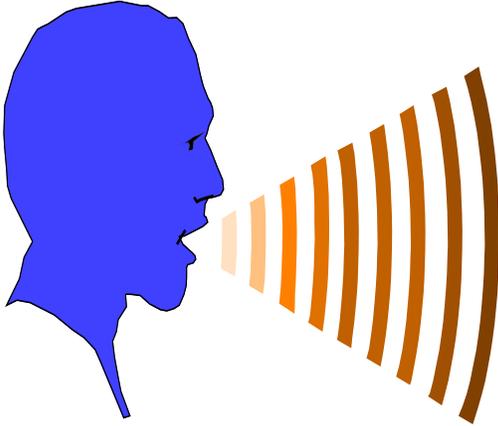
Watering And Caring For The Seed That Is Already In Process To Produce A Harvest.

The Seed Has Been Germinated, Grown And Has Now Produced A Harvest, 30, 60, 100 Fold.

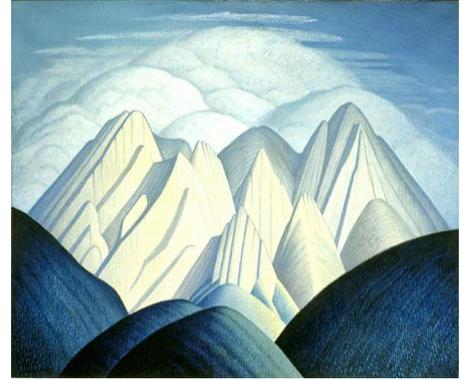
1. Speak to the Mountain

Mark 11:22-24

“Have faith in God,” Jesus answered. “I tell you the truth, if anyone says to this mountain, ‘Go, throw yourself into the sea,’ and does not doubt in his heart but believes that what he says will happen, it will be done for him. Therefore I tell you, whatever you ask for in prayer, believe that you have received it, and it will be yours.



**“Go
Throw
Yourself
Into The
Sea!”**



Scriptures:

**“By His Stripes I Am Healed”
“Greater Is He That Is In Me...”
“My God Shall Supply All My Needs...”
“I Can Do All Things Through Christ...”
“The Love Of God Is In My Heart...”
“I Overcame Them By The Blood...”**

Mountains Of:

**Sickness & Disease
Fear & Doubt
Poverty & Lack
Weakness & Disability
Personal Relationships
The Flesh, Devil & World**

The MOUNTAIN HAS NO CHOICE when we operate in the Spirit of Faith! We are calling it the way we want it; not the way it appears. The mountain of problem must obey, it has no other choice. Notice in the ministry of Jesus, that He talked to trees, to the wind, sea, dead people, and demons- they all obeyed Him. Jesus always operated in the Spirit of Faith, that is why everything He said came to pass. He did not have to meditate on the Scriptures through the Word of Faith principles in order to get the Word in His heart like we do. That is why many Christians get confused when nothing happens when they speak to the mountain, they have overlooked the precondition to faith; to believe in their heart that what they say will come to pass. Mark 4:35-39; Luke 5:24; 6:10; 17:12-14; John 5:8.

You may say, “but that was Jesus!” True, but let’s read Mark 11:22-24 again, and you will notice that He has given us the authority to walk in His footsteps according to: John 14:12-13; 1 John 2:6. Take the Word that is stored in your heart (the sword of your spirit), and destroy those problem areas in your life- **SPEAK DIRECTLY TO THE PROBLEM** in Jesus’ Name!

Remember, these words did not originate with us! They are not words we had dreamed up! We are speaking God's Word to the mountain, not our own words. When we put Bible promises in our hearts and speak them out of our mouths, on the authority of God's Word, the facts in our life have to obey, and conform to God's eternal truths. However, if we venture out into presumption, outside the written Word of God, we are speaking after the traditions of men, and presumption- resulting in no power to move mountains!

1 Corinthians 4:6-7

Now, brothers, I have applied these things to myself and Apollos for your benefit, so that you may learn from us the meaning of the saying, "Do not go beyond what is written." Then you will not take pride in one man over against another. For who makes you different from anyone else? What do you have that you did not receive? And if you did receive it, why do you boast as though you did not?

Mark 7:6-9,13

He replied, "Isaiah was right when he prophesied about you hypocrites; as it is written: "'These people honor me with their lips, but their hearts are far from me. They worship me in vain; their teachings are but rules taught by men.' You have let go of the commands of God and are holding on to the traditions of men." And he said to them: "You have a fine way of setting aside the commands of God in order to observe your own traditions! Thus you nullify the word of God by your tradition that you have handed down. And you do many things like that."

Jesus was so highly developed in His faith, because He always spoke that which He heard from His Father. There, was no corruption in His words, He always said what He meant and meant what He said. People who are always joking, are flirting with deception, just read **Proverbs 26:18-19!** When we learn to only speak the truth like Jesus did, we will become highly developed in faith.

John 12:49

For I did not speak of my own accord, but the Father who sent me commanded me what to say and how to say it.

It is more than just what we say about the circumstances or the mountain of problems that are facing us. We must develop faith in our words so we can believe what we are saying day after day will come to pass. The only way that can be done is by speaking only the things we desire to come to pass. Let's not speak the things we don't desire. We have developed our vocabulary to speak negative things. Most of our common sayings are negative. Our every day speech has been influenced by the enemy to keep us from releasing faith in our words.

It will take a period of time before we can believe that everything we say will come to pass. We don't get there overnight, we may have been talked foolishness, and perverse speech for many years- keep it simple, Mathew 5:37. To just believe is not enough. The Bible is very explicit about speaking the Word out loud. Certainly one can pray silently, and God will hear us, but when it comes to releasing our faith, it needs to be spoken.

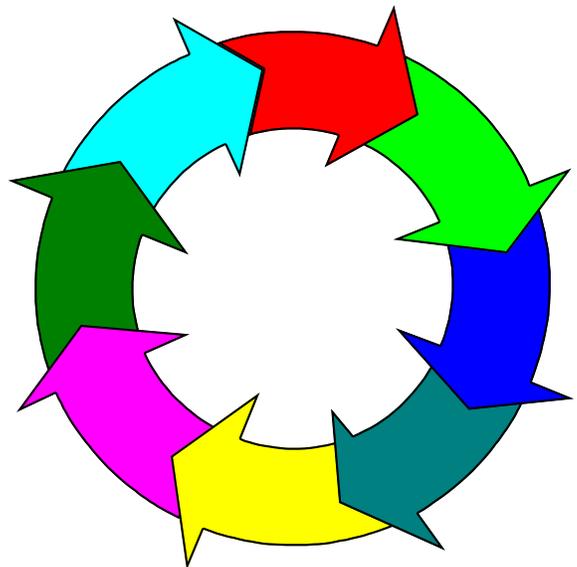
Don't expect to become highly developed in faith overnight. Walking by faith is a lifestyle and it takes time. There is a process of learning and applying the principles of God. Not only that, we are not always going to operate these principle correctly the first time either. We must be willing to make mistakes, and if it's not working, then we need to honestly evaluate what we have been doing. Another mature believer can provide an objective perspective to what they see going on in our lives that may be tripping us up.

It was 25 years from the time God made the promise to Abraham, until it came to pass. We make the mistake when we think everything is going to happen in a few days. Growing in faith is a process. We are the sum total today of the words we spoke yesterday. Many people fail to realize that it takes time for things to develop. It takes time to turn things around. If we have been negative for 15 years, we are not going to change those deep seated patterns of behavior in just four days.

First, we must set things in motion in the spiritual realm through faith filled words. Seven hundred and fifty years before the Father sent Jesus into this earth, He spoke it through the prophet Isaiah. God started saying it 750 years before it came to pass. But so often we want things to happen overnight. We must learn to operate in God's principles. It is so easy to overload our faith. We must learn to recognize the level to which our faith is developed, then operate on that level until we develop to a higher level.

Saying and believing brings results according to Mark 11:22-24. However, just speaking to the mountain for the sake of just speaking, won't cut it- anyone can do that, even unbelievers. The ungodly do not have Bible faith to move mountains- 2 Thessalonians 3:2 "*And pray that we may be delivered from wicked and evil men, for not everyone has faith.*" We must believe that everything we say to the mountain *will come to pass*. Believing is a pre-requisite to moving the mountain. We must release faith from our hearts in every word we speak, that is the "Spirit of Faith" that moves mountains out of our lives.

Practice God's principles in order to set them into motion in your life. For the promises of God's Word are as near to you as getting them in your mouth. Dare to speak His Word of Promise to the mountains in your life. The Word is working all the time, but it takes awhile for the results to be manifested. What you speak is what you believe. Then what you believe is what you speak over and over again. Thus faith grows stronger in your heart every time you speak it.



God's promises will not happen in our lives just because it's in the Bible, it's not automatic. Each promise of God has to be discovered, and appropriated through faith in order for us to enjoy the benefit of it. We must get in agreement with what God has said in His Word, and confess that as being true in our life. Confession is affirming something we believe. It is testifying to something we know. It is witnessing to a truth we have embraced.

Hebrews 4:14

Therefore, since we have a great high priest who has gone through the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold firmly to the faith we profess.

“Let us hold firmly to the faith we profess.” This passage of Scripture defines confession for us. To confess means, “to say the same thing.” We will never be a conqueror until we confess we are one. If we wait to become a conqueror before we believe we are one, we are mistaken. We have to confess it first to become one. Faith’s confessions create reality. Faith has no expression without confession. Faith grows with the confession of God’s Word. We will never rise above our confession of God’s Word in our life. Confession brings possession, it is the act of mixing God’s Word with faith that brings results- Hebrews 4:3.

2 Corinthians 4:13

It is written: “I believed; therefore I have **spoken**.” With that same spirit of faith we also believe and therefore speak.

Spoken: Greek- verb: To talk, utter words, preach, say, speak, tell, utter

The “Word of Faith” takes the Written Word of God (Greek LOGOS), and produces faith in the heart. The “Spirit of Faith” transforms that Word in our heart into the Spoken Word of God (Greek RHEMA), that moves mountains.

2 Timothy 2:15:

3056. logos, log'-os; from G3004; something said (including the thought); by impl. a topic (subject of discourse), also reasoning (the mental faculty) or motive; by extens. a computation; spec. (with the art. in John) the Divine Expression (i.e. Christ):--account, cause, communication, X concerning, doctrine, fame, X have to do, intent, matter, mouth, preaching, question, reason, + reckon, remove, say (-ing), shew, X speaker, speech, talk, thing, + none of these things move me, tidings, treatise, utterance, word, work.

Ephesians 1:13

4487. rhema, hray'-mah; from G4483; an utterance (individ., collect. or spec.); by impl. a matter or topic (espec. of narration, command or dispute); with a neg. naught whatever:--+ evil, + nothing, saying, word. 4483. rheo, hreh'-o; for certain tenses of which a prol. form ereo, er-eh'-o, is used; and both as alt. for G2036; perh. akin (or ident.) with G4482 (through the idea of pouring forth); to utter, i.e. speak or say:--command, make, say, speak (of). Comp. G3004.

You Will Never Be A Conqueror Until You Confess You Are One!

A) Three Kinds Of Confession

- 1) The lordship of Jesus Christ- Romans 10:9
- 2) The Believer’s confession of his/her sins- 1 John 1:9
- 3) Faith in the promises of God in His Word- 2 Peter 1:2-4

Lordship of Jesus Christ:

Since the sacrificial death, burial, and resurrection of Jesus Christ has done away with sin once and for all time (Hebrews 9:26-28), there is only one sin left that man can commit, that sends him to hell. The sin of rejecting Jesus Christ as his Lord and Savior- John 3:35-36. The Holy Spirit has been sent to convict the sinner of this one sin- John 16:7-10.

The Believer's Confession of Sin:

When we mention the word confession, most people invariably think of confession of sin, weakness, and failure. The Bible has a lot more to say on the positive side than the negative side. James 5:16; 1 John 1:9; 5:16 all talk about prayer, and the confession of sin. In Acts 19:18, we read about Christians who were backslidden into the occult, but repented, and showed their repentance by their deeds. When a believer sins, his **fellowship** is broken with the Father, not his **relationship**! An interruption or breach in communication has occurred. Not until the believer confesses it to the Father, will his fellowship be restored (1 John 1:3-7)- consider what happens between natural parents and their children.

When we have sinned, we know it (1 John 3:21), our heart condemns us, not the Holy Spirit. If we don't know if we have sinned, we shouldn't try to find something with which to condemn ourselves according to Romans 8:1. Nor should we confess our sins over and over again. This builds weakness, doubt, and sin consciousness into our spirits. If we've confessed the sin once, He's forgiven us, and has forgotten it, so we too must forget it- Isaiah 43:25; Hebrews 8:12. Satan will try to take advantage of us through false condemnation; he does not play by the rules, so we will have to remind him of them! Even if we commit the same old dumb sin over and over again, 490 times a day and confess it 490 times from our heart, the Lord will forgive us- Matthew 8:21. Thankfully we don't have to suffer some kind of penitence, like sickness, condemnation, or other junk the devil would like to put off on us. Jesus already has paid the price as our substitute. He suffered the penalty for our sins, so we don't have to.

Faith In The Word:

Romans 10:10 (KJV)

For with the heart man believes unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

Confession leads to the possession of God's promises. *No where does the Bible teach that if we just believe in our heart we'll get an answer.* Speaking God's Word releases the grace (Divine Energy and Power) within it, and it won't return to us void. Salvation is received through confession, so is everything else we receive from God. All that we receive from God comes the same way, through faith. We believe the Word in our heart, and confess it out of our mouth for: Salvation, Healing, Prosperity, Baptism in the Holy Spirit etc. Please take note that in Mark 11:23, that believing is mentioned once, but confession is mentioned three times.

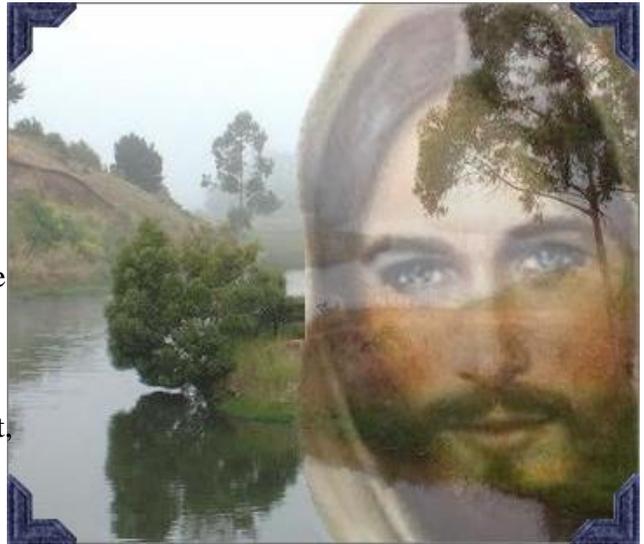
B) What Is Confession?

- 1) It's affirming something that we believe
- 2) It's testifying to something that we know
- 3) It's witnessing to a truth that we've embraced

C) What Are We To Confess?

- 1) What God in Christ wrought for us in the plan of redemption
- 2) What God through the Word, and the Holy Spirit wrought for us in the new birth, and the baptism of the Holy Spirit.
- 3) What we are to God the Father in Christ Jesus
- 4) What Jesus is doing for us now, seated at the right hand of the Father, where He ever lives to make intercession for us- Hebrews 7:25.
- 5) What God can do through us, or what His Word will do through our lips.

We cannot confess to or witness about things we do not know about. It's what we personally know about the Lord Jesus Christ, and who we are in Him that counts. Unfortunately, so many Christians profess to here-say from others rather than person revelation from the Bible through the Holy Spirit. Many people know the Lord as their personal Savior, but they don't know their rights, and privileges in Him. When people know who they are in Christ, and take advantage of that fact, they cannot fail in the Christian life. To be a successful Christian, we must know who we are in Christ. When we know that, and think in line with that, believe and confess that, then there is no failure in us. Find Scriptures, In Him, In Whom etc. The moment we find them, begin to confess, "This is who I am,



and what I have." If we'll do that, life will be different for us before many days. Remember Christianity is called, "The Great Confession." In Galatians 3:13, it states, "Christ has redeemed us from the curse of the law," which is summed up in three things- poverty, sickness and the second death. Galatians 3:14 refers to the blessing of Abraham as being ours- material, financial, physical and spiritual blessings 3 John 2, "*Beloved, I pray that you may prosper in all things and be in health, just as your soul prospers.*"

Christianity Is Called, "The Great Confession"

I have learned not to pray for money anymore. We have authority through the Name of Jesus. The Father is the one who owns all the gold and silver (Haggai 2:8; Psalms 24:1), and the cattle on a 1,000 hills- Psalms 50:10. Instead of praying to God for it, I simply say, "Satan, take your hands off my finances" and I specifically claim the amount I need in Jesus' Name. When God gave man dominion in the garden of Eden, the devil came, and usurped it from Adam. Thus, Satan became the god of this world (2 Corinthians 4:4). However, Jesus came as the last Adam, and took back what the devil stole, and gave it to us- the



redeemed of the Lord, Romans 5:17; Luke 10:19. Unless we exert our God given authority in Jesus' Name, the devil will continue to lord himself over our lives. Resist him with the Word in the Name of Jesus, and take back what he has stolen- John 10:10.

We will never rise above our confessions of God's Word. The confession of our lips that has grown out of faith in our heart will absolutely beat the devil in every combat. If an individual does not believe in his heart the confession of his lips are making, then it will not work.

Faith Is A Release Of Delegated Authority!

I never have been able to understand how anybody could think he can get help from God apart from His Word. God moves in line with His Word. We should treat His Word with the same reverence as we would treat Jesus if He were here in the flesh. God has given us His Word to get our thinking straightened out. If any of my thinking is not in line with God's Word, I'm certainly going to change my thinking to conform to the eternal standard, our final authority- Psalms 119:152.

Mark 16:20

Then the disciples went out and preached everywhere, and the Lord worked with them and confirmed his word by the signs that accompanied it.

We renew our mind by studying the Word of God. The Word of God teaches us to have the, "mind of Christ" according to 1 Corinthians 2:16. The only way we can have the mind of Christ is to study His Word, believe it in our heart, and act upon it. We must stop holding to the confession of our senses, and hold onto what God's Word says. If the Word says we are healed, then we are! Act on the Word, and it will heal us every time- Proverbs 4:20-22. Believing God is believing His Word. I can't understand God the Father by feeling. I can't understand the Lord Jesus Christ by my feelings.

I understand God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ, only by what the Word says about them. We need to get acquainted with God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ through the Word. They are everything the Word says they are. Many people try to get acquainted with God through their feelings. When they feel well, they think God heard them. If they don't feel well, they think He has not heard them. Their faith is based on their feelings. Our faith must be based on God's Word. If God's Word says He hears me, then I know He hears me, because He said so, and His Word cannot lie. I will believe the Word regardless of the evidence that would attempt to satisfy my physical senses.

Let me illustrate the necessity to be persistent, when it comes to standing on God's Word regardless of physical circumstances and difficulties. It takes determination to receive healing. Look at the little woman who pressed through the crowd to touch the hem of Jesus' garment, or the Syrophenician woman who desired healing for her daughter, or the man whose friends let him down through the roof. Those people had the attitude: no matter what it takes or how long it takes, I will receive from Jesus, because I know He is the source of my healing, deliverance or any other need. Unfortunately, the devil is also persistent. If he thinks that he can move us from our stand of faith by worsening or continuing the symptoms, he will do so. And if we are looking to our body or other circumstances to be the measure of whether or not God is working, we will eventually give up. But the measure of what God is doing should always be His Word which does not change. If He said He would do it, then He is doing it no matter what the circumstances to the contrary might say.

Matthew 15:21-28

Leaving that place, Jesus withdrew to the region of Tyre and Sidon. A Canaanite woman from that vicinity came to him, crying out, "Lord, Son of David, have mercy on me! My daughter is suffering terribly from demon-possession." Jesus did not answer a word. So his disciples came to him and urged him, "Send her away, for she keeps crying out after us." He answered, "I was sent only to the lost sheep of Israel." The woman came and knelt before him. "Lord, help me!" she said. He replied, "It is not right to take the children's bread and toss it to their dogs." "Yes, Lord," she said, "but even the dogs eat the crumbs that fall from their masters' table." Then Jesus answered, "Woman, you have great faith! Your request is granted." And her daughter was healed from that very hour.

Don't let people talk you out of what God has promised. The things God has given you by promise are not wrong for you. Believe for them; put your confession of faith out there for these promises, but do it by the Bible method. Confession of God's Word works for us, because it sets the law of faith into motion- faith is a law of God, Romans 3:27.

Hebrews 10:23- Let us hold unswervingly to the hope we profess, for he who promised is faithful.

What we believe is a result of our thinking. If we think wrong, we will believe wrong. We must renew our mind with the Word. If our believing is wrong, our confession will be wrong, and it will all hinge on our thinking. Our thinking has to be in line with the Word of God, because actually we will not be able to believe beyond the knowledge we have of the Word of God. Nothing will be impossible to us, if we think right, believe right, and confess right- Mark 9:23; Luke 1:37. To believe in our heart means that we also must speak that Word out of our mouth. The two go hand in hand.

God's Word Comes First. Faith In God's Word Comes Second. Feeling Comes Last!

D) The Spiritual Dynamics Of Confession

The confession of the believer does several things:

First it Locates You:

Matthew 12:33-37

“Make a tree good and its fruit will be good, or make a tree bad and its fruit will be bad, for a tree is recognized by its fruit. You brood of vipers, how can you who are evil say anything good? For out of the overflow of the heart the mouth speaks. The good man brings good things out of the good stored up in him, and the evil man brings evil things out of the evil stored up in him. But I tell you that men will have to give account on the day of judgment for every careless word they have spoken. For by your words you will be acquitted, and by your words you will be condemned.”

We can locate the spiritual position a person is in by just listening to them. Our words give us away, to whether or not we are in faith or in fear. In order to change our vocabulary, we need to start hearing God's Word, which will renew our mind, and store the truth in our hearts. As a result, it will become second nature for us to speak God's Word. What is instinctive for us to do and say is based on what we have stored in our spirit- Proverbs 23:7 (KJV), *“As a man thinketh in his heart so is he.”*

Second, it Fixes the Landmarks of Your Life:

Numbers 13:26-33

They came back to Moses and Aaron and the whole Israelite community at Kadesh in the Desert of Paran. There they reported to them and to the whole assembly and showed them the fruit of the land. They gave Moses this account: “We went into the land to which you sent us, and it does flow with milk and honey! Here is its fruit. But the people who live there are powerful, and the cities are fortified and very large. We even saw descendants of Anak there. The Amalekites live in the Negev; the Hittites, Jebusites and Amorites live in the hill country; and the Canaanites live near the sea and along the Jordan.”

Then Caleb silenced the people before Moses and said, “We should go up and take possession of the land, for we can certainly do it.” But the men who had gone up with him said, “We can't attack those people; they are stronger than we are.” And they spread among the Israelites a bad report about the land they had explored. They said, “The land we explored devours those living in it. All the people we saw there are of great size. We saw the Nephilim there (the descendants of Anak come from the Nephilim). We seemed like grasshoppers in our own eyes, and we looked the same to them.”

We will not receive beyond what we say. If we say we can't, then we can't- we get nothing. But if we say we can, then we can. The reason the majority of Christians are weak even though they are earnest, is that they have never dared to make a confession of who they are in Jesus. How do we do this? First, we must realize how God looks at us, and confess it! Then boldly confess what the Word declares we are in Christ Jesus. As we do this, our faith will abound. The reason faith is held in bondage is that we have never dared to confess what God says we are. Faith, then, grows with our confession of God's Word.

There is no faith without confession! Confession is classified as an action, or act of releasing, putting into force our faith- it's faith's way of expressing itself. Our faith will rise no higher than our confession of God's Word. Note, if we could not lose faith, we would not need to hold fast to our confession of that faith- 1 Timothy 5:11-14; Hebrews 3:16; 4:14.

Confession is to faith as thrust is to an airplane. Unless there is thrust, we will not have any lift on the wings of an airplane. When the thrust is gone, that law is gone, and the law of gravity will pull us down. So it is with the confession of our faith. We must confess God's Word to continue in faith. Faith is the substance of things hoped for, and faith comes by hearing the Word of God- these are spiritual principles that are always the same!



There Is No Faith Without Confession & Faith Grows With Our Confession Of God's Word!

We will find that our confession of faith in God's Word will open the door for Him to work on our behalf- Isaiah 43:26 NKJV, “*Put Me in remembrance; Let us contend together; State your case, that you may be acquitted.*” I am not suggesting that we manipulate God into fulfilling our selfish desires. That would be impossible to do according to 1 James 4:1-3. We are only saying what God has already said, and so declaring that it's His will, according to His Holy Written Word. Besides, confession of His Word is His idea, in order that He may bring to pass His wonderful provision for our lives- 2 Peter 1:1-4.

Confession of God's Word puts angels to work on our behalf according to Hebrews 1:13-14 and Revelation 22:8-9. Angels are listening to what we say, because what we say has a tremendous affect on what they do. Angels know what God said, and it seems that the angels are on earth to make sure that God's Word comes to pass concerning our lives. I believe the words we speak that are in agreement with God's Word gives them assignments. They hearken to the sound we give to God's Word out of our mouths.

Psalms 103:19-20 (KJV)

The LORD has prepared his throne in the heavens; and his kingdom rules over all. Bless the LORD, you his angels, that excel in strength, that do his commandments, **hearkening unto the voice of his word.**

We influence angels by speaking God's Word after Him- Psalms 107:2 "*Let the redeemed of the LORD say so, whom he has redeemed from the hand of the enemy.*" If we are obeying the Lord's instructions in Mark 11:22-24, then the angels are assigned to make sure that we eventually have what we are saying. Now it may take some time, but rest assured, that they are working on it day and night.

Daniel 10:7-12

I, Daniel, was the only one who saw the vision; the men with me did not see it, but such terror overwhelmed them that they fled and hid themselves. So I was left alone, gazing at this great vision; I had no strength left, my face turned deathly pale and I was helpless. Then I heard him speaking, and as I listened to him, I fell into a deep sleep, my face to the ground. A hand touched me and set me trembling on my hands and knees. He said, "Daniel, you who are highly esteemed, consider carefully the words I am about to speak to you, and stand up, for I have now been sent to you." And when he said this to me, I stood up trembling. Then he continued, "Do not be afraid, Daniel. Since the first day that you set your mind to gain understanding and to humble yourself before your God, **your words were heard, and I have come in response to them."**

Our Words Will Set The Kingdom Of God Astir!

E) What Would Constitute A Wrong Confession?

To put it simply, a wrong confession either indirectly or directly glorifies the devil. The statement I just made may come to you as a shock, but it is true none the less. The obvious question now is, "well, what is a wrong confession then?" A wrong confession of course is a confession of defeat, failure and of the supremacy of Satan in some way. Some Christians are always talking about their combat with the devil. They magnify the devil, and what he is doing. Anytime one talks of how the devil is holding him in bondage, how he makes him sick, how he is kept from success, it is a confession of defeat and failure.

2 Corinthians 10:17- But, "Let him who boasts boast in the Lord!"

When A Wrong Confession Is Made, We Give Satan Dominion Over Us!

A wrong confession destroys our faith. It holds us in bondage. Therefore, don't talk about the circumstances or what the devil is doing. The confession of our lips that has grown out of faith in our heart will absolutely defeat the devil in every combat. With our mouth we either give God dominion over us, or we give it to Satan. Whatever we confess will begin to dominate our life. In Romans 10:9, when we confessed Jesus as our Lord, He immediately became the Lord of our life, and began to exercise dominion and rule in our life, praise God- Colossians 1:13-14. However, when we confess Satan's ability to hinder us (directly or indirectly), even though we are a Christian, we are in fact giving Satan dominion over our life. He is the god of this world, and he will move right in, if we permit him to do so.

It may be a permission of ignorance on our part, or an unconscious consent, but he cannot dominate us without our consent. This does not mean we have lost our salvation, but it does mean we have given the devil a foothold in our life according to Ephesians 4:27. The Bible would not warn us not to give the devil a foothold in our life if he could not have one, when we open the door. If we have, then resist him in Jesus' Name, and let's put a watch over our mouth- 1 Peter 5:8-9.

Psalm 141:3- Set a guard over my mouth, O LORD; keep watch over the door of my lips.

When Satan is exercising this illegitimate dominion over our life, we will be filled with weakness and failure. Confess the truth, God's Word is truth- John 17:17. It may not be true right now in our life, but by confessing it, in time, the Word will replace what we have now (defeat) with what we want (victory), because God's Word is a higher law- Romans 8:1. However, it will only be true in our life if we enforce it through the confession of God's Word out of our mouth.

Legally, Jesus has provided us with all things that pertain to life and godliness, but it's not automatically applied in our life. When we do begin to appropriate the Word in our life through faith, the devil will attempt to overthrow our faith through trials, tests and temptations; it's all a battle of words- Matthew 4:1-11; 2 Corinthians 10:3-5. As we practice God's Word in our life against the obstacles of life, we will grow up spiritually, each battle we win, the next one will be easier to overcome.

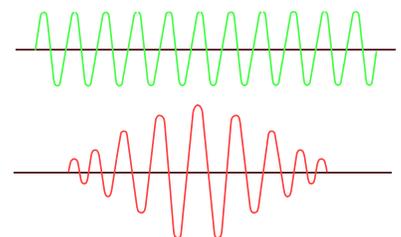
John 16:33

"I have told you these things, so that in me you may have peace. In this world you will have trouble. But take heart! I have overcome the world."

1 John 5:4-5

For everyone born of God overcomes the world. This is the victory that has overcome the world, even our faith. Who is it that overcomes the world? Only he who believes that Jesus is the Son of God.

Only a few realize that our confessions imprison us and that only the right kind of confession will set us free. It is not only our thinking, but it is the words we speak that will build power or weakness into us. It is what we confess with our lips that really dominates our inner being. We unconsciously confess what we believe- out of the abundance of the heart, the mouth speaks. If we talk sickness, poverty, weakness, and failure, it's because we believe in them, by hearing ourselves and others speaking these kinds of words over and over again.



It is necessary that there be a continual confession of our redemption from Satan's dominion, and that he no longer rules over us with condemnation, or the curse of the law. We are to, "hold Fast" to our confession, because our confession is Satan's defeat. Jesus defeated the devil nearly 2,000 years ago at Calvary, but what he did for us legally has to become a vital, living reality in our lives. We will never understand thoroughly the Word of God until we can see clearly the two different sides of our redemption- **the legal side and the vital side.**

Legal Side

Vital Side

**Balance Between: Facts Of - How To Receive
Redemption It In Our Lives**

The Greek tense of Hebrews 4:14 is, "*Let us hold fast to saying the same thing.*" Our confession will either imprison us or set us free. Confession is the result of our believing, and our believing is the result of our right or wrong thinking. The promises of God must first be spoken over our lives as though they are a reality, before the manifestation of the promise comes to pass. It is already provided for, according to the Word. It belongs to us, but if we never dare to confess it or claim it, we will never walk in it for ourselves. When we confess who we are in Christ, claim it and walk in it, we are just appropriating the reality of what already is legally ours in Jesus Christ.

Romans 4:17

As it is written: "I have made you a father of many nations." He is our father in the sight of God, in whom he believed — the God who gives life to the dead and calls things that are not as though they were.

Mark 11:22-24

"Have faith in God," Jesus answered. "I tell you the truth, if anyone says to this mountain, 'Go, throw yourself into the sea,' and does not doubt in his heart but believes that what he says will happen, it will be done for him. Therefore I tell you, whatever you ask for in prayer, believe that you have received it, and it will be yours."

For example, in the area of healing, many people receive healing in a large crusade where the corporate anointing is in operation, but when they get on their own, the devil takes advantage of their ignorance of the principles of faith. As a result, they lose their healing because they fail to keep their mouth in line with the Word, "saying the same thing concerning the promises of God." The moment the devil slaps some symptoms on their body in an attempt to deceive them into opening the door, they say, "well, I guess that old cancer has come back on me again." That is just what the devil wanted to hear, and says, "thank you very much, here have seven times as much cancer as you had before, maybe this time I can kill you quicker before you get healed again."

Sometimes we do people an injustice by not following up with them, by teaching from God's Word on how to keep their healing. The enemy will come and test it, in order to see if he can put it back on them. If they don't get their minds renewed with God's Word in order to speak in agreement with the Word, that same old thing will come back on them, because the "whine" is still in their voice.

We can pray for people in faith, but if they maintain the wrong confession, it will do no good. It will nullify the affects of our prayer- 1 Peter 5:8; James 4:7. Some people believe that anyone can pray the prayer of faith for them and get results, whether they believe the Word or not- **Wrong!** Prayer is important, but it is the prayer of faith in agreement with the other person that gets the job done. I have heard some people say, “well, Jesus can do anything.” Not according to Mark 6:5-6, if Jesus could not help people who were stubbornly persisting in doubt and unbelief, neither can we.

Mark 6:5-6

Jesus could not do any miracles there, except lay his hands on a few sick people and heal them. And he was amazed at their lack of faith.

Please do not confess your doubts. We don't have any more business entertaining doubts then we do dope. Doubt is just as evil and destructive as dope is in a person's life. Since it is evil, we have no business putting up with it in our lives. Doubt is contraband goods, and the devil is the doubt dealer. Expose and renounce all forms of doubt, as subtle as they appear, don't allow it to escape your lips, because if you do, it will nullify your faith. Resist doubt and fear in the Name of the Lord Jesus Christ, and those “tormenting twins” of the enemy will leave you. We have no more business in saying words of doubt than in saying curse words- that is the devil's language.

Many people think they are just being honest when they confess that they are afraid or that they doubt. They are also usually the ones, who are the first to criticize those who speak faith in the face of difficult situations. Start confessing who you are in Christ. You are a believer, a new creation, so start acting like one! Talk that, believe that, and think that.

Many people do not have any faith, because they talk themselves out of it when they pray. How? They bring up every sin or mistake they can think of, and when they get through, they don't have any faith at all, because they are holding themselves under condemnation, and making the wrong confession. The believer who is continually confessing his sins and weaknesses is building weakness, failure, and sin into his consciousness.

As long as you hold to a confession of weakness, sickness, and pain, you still have these problems. You may search for some man of God to pray the prayer of faith for you, but it will be of no avail, because your unbelief will destroy the affects of his faith. As I said before, some people get healed by mass faith, but when they get on their own, Satan takes advantage of their unbelief and the sickness returns. No matter how long someone prays for you, as long as you act against the Word, the Word can't work for you, but when you act in line with it, it will work for you, every time without exception.

Hebrews 3:17-19

And with whom was he angry for forty years? Was it not with those who sinned, whose bodies fell in the desert? And to whom did God swear that they would never enter his rest if not to those who disobeyed? So we see that they were not able to enter, because of their unbelief.



God's Hands Are Tied Until You Step Into Agreement With His Word!

F) What Do We Do In The Midst Of Contradictory Evidence?

There are many facts about our lives that are not in agreement with God's Word. It may be a fact that we have a particular problem, like fear let's say. It may be a fact that we are currently being oppressed by this demonic force- a spirit of fear. These may be facts that are evident in our life, but it is not the final authority. Let's not put up with anything the devil throws at us. Let's stand up in faith and speak the truth of God's Word which is our final authority for all matters that pertain to life and conduct. What God's Word says, is how He sees us, and truth always trumps facts.

John 8:31-32 NKJV

Then Jesus said to those Jews who believed Him, "If you abide in My word, you are My disciples indeed. And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free."

At times we are all guilty of speaking contrary to the truth in one form or another- James 3:14. If you are dealing with some form of fear in your life, begin confessing the below promise in God's Word. I would encourage you to personalize this truth by speaking it in first person.

Isaiah 54:14-15

In righteousness you will be established: Tyranny will be far from you; you will have nothing to fear. Terror will be far removed; it will not come near you. If anyone does attack you, it will not be my doing; whoever attacks you will surrender to you.

There is a difference between a fact, and a truth. There is such a things as lying vanities according to Jonah 2:8 (KJV), "*They that observe lying vanities forsake their own mercy.*" Satan's tactics is to take a lie and present it as though it was truth, it's called deception in the Bible. God has provided a way of escape from every test, trial, and temptation, and it is found in the truth of God's Word- 1 Corinthians 10:13. If we seek the counsel of the world or listen to worthless talk that contradicts the truth of God's Word, we are forsaking our own mercy in so doing.

So, in the face of fear, we need to confess, "I am far from oppression; fear does not come nigh me." Someone may say, "You would be lying if you said that if you are still feeling fearful." No, I am speaking the truth. It may not be true in my life at the moment, but that's the reason I'm saying it. That is what faith is all about, calling the thing I do not have as though I did (Romans 4:17); so that which is present in my life (problem), will be replaced by what I want (promise) by God's grace and through my faith- Ephesians 2:8-9.

It may be that the facts in our lives do not line up with what God says we should be and have, but that is all the more reason that we should confess what God has said about the situation. Faith replaces what we have that we don't want, with what we don't have, and do want- Hebrews 11:9, "*He sets aside the first to establish the second.*" God told Joshua to keep speaking the Word, day and night in order to receive the promises of God- Joshua 1:8-9. That is the way we will put confession to work for us. We must confess the promise, even when we feel like the very opposite is true.

Faith is designed to bring substance to what we hope for, not more of the problem we already have- Hebrews 11:1. However, the key is that we must “say what we want” not what we have. **The problem with God’s people is they keep saying what they have;** in so doing, the problem is just reinforced in their life, which is the opposite of what they want. Confession of God’s Word, makes the promises of God valid in our life!

Faith Replaces What You Have And Don’t Want, With What You Don’t Have And Do Want!

That is why we should speak God’s Word, even when outward circumstances say that it isn’t true in the natural. God’s will for us is for the truth of His Word to be true or a reality in every area of our lives. As far as God is concerned, He sees us positioned in Jesus, and in our blood bought redemption. He has already said all He needs to say about it. He has poured His grace (power) into the words of the Bible; when activated through our faith, impossible situations are made possible. So the Father God is waiting on us to set the law of faith into motion to get the job done.

When we begin to see our lives through the eye of faith as God does, we can be greatly encouraged. Natural things are subject to change, and will change when faith is applied to the situation- 2 Corinthians 4:18, *“So we fix our eyes not on what is seen, but on what is unseen. For what is seen is temporary, but what is unseen is eternal.”*

We are called to take the shield of faith, and quench the fiery darts of the devil according to Ephesians 6:16. Some people however, take the shield of doubt, and quench all the blessings of God instead. Let’s call the promises of God into manifestation. Confess God’s Word in the face of every circumstance. If you need to, take your medicine. But confess with every pill, “I believe I receive my healing.” If you wear corrective lenses, whenever you put your contacts in your eyes or put your glasses on confess, “by His stripes, my eyes are healed.” This is a process, just keep speaking God’s Word over every situation.

These things won’t happen overnight, but when we continue to apply God’s principles of faith, they will eventually happen. With the heart, man believes. Faith is an action of the spirit man. Faith works in the heart, not in the head. When a sinner repents, and makes a confession of faith, he releases God’s energy force called grace within him/her. This person has spoken into existence the new birth, into their spirit.

Confession Is Made Unto... New Birth, Healing,...

Romans 10:10



There are some who confess God's Word out of fear. It sounds good. They are saying the right things, but they are doing it out of fear, and desperation. I have heard people say, "well if you can just get desperate enough, God will answer you." A state of hysteria does not impress God, but simply reveals our lack of priorities, and failing to put God's Word first in our life. Instead we have turned to God as a last resort, hoping He will bail us out, and He is faithful to do so. However, isn't it better to have built our lives on God's Word ahead of time, so when the storms of life come, we remain standing? So God does not have to piece us together like humpty dumpty.

However, God wants us to establish a lifestyle of learning to walk by faith, in the good times as well as the seasons of trials, tests, and temptations. Our confession must be done in faith. That is why we must continue to do it. We will speak some things that we don't initially believe when we first speak them, even though we know it's the right thing to do, because it's in the Bible. We know the Bible is true, but it won't necessarily be true in our life immediately. But if we continue to speak, confess, and proclaim it long enough, we will eventually believe it in our spirit. For what we continue to speak, we will eventually believe and receive in time- that is the Word of Faith according to Romans 10:7-10.

Let's get soaked with the Word until we are so Word conscious, that every time we turn around we are thinking about God's Holy Written Word and what it says. While others are talking about everything else, we should keep on talking about what the Word says.

In the face of contrary evidence quote, 2 Corinthians 5:7, "*We live by faith, not by sight*" and say as Smith Wigglesworth had once said, "I am not moved by what I see. I am not moved by what I feel. I am moved only by what I believe. I believe God's Word." God's Word should always come first in our lives. Faith in God's Word comes second. Feelings comes last. Let's learn not to ask how we feel, but tell our feelings how to feel according to James 3:2.

Acts 27:25

So keep up your courage, men, for I have faith in God that it will happen just as he told me.

Faith acts in the face of contrary evidence, and praises above the turmoil- Acts 16:25. God is waiting on us, for He responds to our faith in power and grace. If we learn the principles of faith, it is easy to receive whatever we need from God. When we act upon what God's Word says, or act upon what the Holy Spirit may have spoken to our heart, results are forth coming- Acts 13:1-3. That is faith! According to Mark 11:24, faith says, "It's mine, I have it now!" For example, when we have to believe we receive for our healing, we have to believe we receive healing for our body, while our body is still not functioning right. And if we believe that we receive it, that is when we have it!

Most people want to receive their healing first, and then believe it. Most people hope for healing, instead of believing for it. FAITH IS NOW- speak in present tense! Hope is future tense, what tense are we speaking in? That is a big reason why we are or are not receiving our needs met. I believe I am, and I receive the answer to my prayer. Faith expects, knows, and acts like it's so, and declares it's mine- I have it now!

- Have God's Word on the subject
- Believe and act like it is so
- Consider not the contradictory circumstances
- Praise God for the answer
- Faith believes before it sees
- Faith rests when put to the test
- Faith sings about things not seen
- Faith knows before it shows
- Faith acts as though it's fact

If I pray just once for something, and don't get it, I start changing. I start changing, because if I pray, and that prayer is not answered, there will have to be a change before the answer comes. And I know there can't be any change with God; He never changes. So if there's any changing, it has to be on my part. Therefore, if I pray and do not receive, then I start changing. There is no validity to a response like, "Well, God may have some mysterious purpose, so this time He is saying no." That kind of an answer is a cop out, we are just giving up, and rationalizing in a religious frame of mind. Such thinking contradicts Scripture, because God never changes. God's Word is God's will, if it is "Yes" one time, it will be "Yes" the next. If it is



God's will to heal us one time, it is His will to heal us every time, immediately, not a 100 years from now, because faith is now. Nowhere in the ministry of Jesus did it take years, months, or even weeks before people received an answer. True, not everyone received their healing instantaneously, but it was soon after He spoke the healing Word, that the manifestation came.

Unit 11 Review:

What is the difference between the “Word of Faith” and the “Spirit of Faith?”

List the three kinds of confessions; what is confession and what should we confess?

Explain the “Two” spiritual dynamics of confession?

So what constitutes a “Wrong” confession?

Explain the two sides of redemption?

2. Calling Those Things That be Not as Though They Were

Now in Genesis chapter 12 we see God's first call to Abraham, "I will make you into a great nation, and I will bless you." At this time his name was Abram, and he was 75 years old. Abram obeyed, and traveled to the land of Canaan. In Genesis 15, God appeared to Abram again, but this time Abram asks God the obvious question:

Genesis 15:1-6

After this, the word of the LORD came to Abram in a vision: "Do not be afraid, Abram. I am your shield, your very great reward." But Abram said, "O Sovereign LORD, what can you give me since I remain childless and the one who will inherit my estate is Eliezer of Damascus?" And Abram said, "You have given me no children; so a servant in my household will be my heir." Then the word of the LORD came to him: "This man will not be your heir, but a son coming from your own body will be your heir." He took him outside and said, "Look up at the heavens and count the stars-if indeed you can count them." Then he said to him, "So shall your offspring be." Abram believed the LORD, and he credited it to him as righteousness.

Abram, had asked a logical question; since God had promised to make him a father of many nations, he first must have a son! God is a faith God, He was calling Abram something he was not at the time (a dad), and Abram was getting a little confused over the matter. We see that God was operating in faith, and Abram did not have the foggiest idea how this promise was going to come to pass, but he decided to take God at His Word anyway. The Bible states that, "Abram believed the LORD, and He credited it to him as righteousness." Abram entered into covenant with the Lord, and his name was changed to "Abraham" meaning "Father of many nations."

Unfortunately, Abraham got anxious, being 86 years old at the time, he decided to help God out and do something about his childless situation- BIG MISTAKE! In Genesis chapter 16, we see religion at its finest- man's ideas to bring about God's will on the earth. Abraham and his wife Sarah decided to use a maidservant in order to help things along. Predictably, the whole thing was a failure and blew up in their faces.

Genesis 16:1-5

Now Sarai, Abram's wife, had borne him no children. But she had an Egyptian maidservant named Hagar; so she said to Abram, "The LORD has kept me from having children. Go, sleep with my maidservant; perhaps I can build a family through her." Abram agreed to what Sarai said. So after Abram had been living in Canaan ten years, Sarai his wife took her Egyptian maidservant Hagar and gave her to her husband to be his wife. He slept with Hagar, and she conceived. When she knew she was pregnant, she began to despise her mistress. Then Sarai said to Abram, "You are responsible for the wrong I am suffering. I put my servant in your arms, and now that she knows she is pregnant, she despises me. May the LORD judge between you and me."

As a result, Ishmael was born, who becomes a thorn in their flesh. Eventually he was finally driven away, because of the covenant God had made with Abraham; his second son Isaac was his rightful heir- Genesis 17:19-20. The account of Ishmael and his descendants are recorded in Genesis 25:12-18. All throughout the rest of history, even until today, Ishmael's descendants are hostile to the people of Israel- a costly mistake for being impatient. God still brought about His original plan, but Abraham's little escapade still bears unpleasant consequences for his impetuous actions- a word to the wise should be sufficient.

When God confirmed His promise to Abraham, he was 99 years old at the time, He said, “I **have** made you a Father of many nations” in Genesis 17:1-5. Since the first time God had spoken the promise to Abraham, about 25 years had elapsed. Here we see a great faith principle in action. There was a divine design for God to change Abram’s name to Abraham, meaning “Father of many nations.” Every time he heard his name, faith in God’s promise was being produced- Romans 10:17. For example, when someone would call out to Abraham, it would be the same as saying, “Hey father of many nations, can you come over here and help me?” So apparently it took some time for him to believe the promise. When he finally became fully persuaded concerning the promise of God (Romans 4:21), Isaac was born.

Genesis 17:1-8

When Abram was ninety-nine years old, the LORD appeared to him and said, “I am God Almighty; walk before me and be blameless. I will confirm my covenant between me and you and will greatly increase your numbers.” Abram fell facedown, and God said to him, “As for me, this is my covenant with you: You will be the father of many nations. No longer will you be called Abram; your name will be Abraham, for I have made you a father of many nations.

I will make you very fruitful; I will make nations of you, and kings will come from you. I will establish my covenant as an everlasting covenant between me and you and your descendants after you for the generations to come, to be your God and the God of your descendants after you. The whole land of Canaan, where you are now an alien, I will give as an everlasting possession to you and your descendants after you; and I will be their God.”

Abraham encountered three visitors, one of whom was the second person of the God head, the Word of God Himself- Jesus. The Lord told Abraham He was going to have a son through Sarah. Sarah was eavesdropping on their conversation, and when she overheard that point, she laughed to herself in disbelief.

Genesis 18: 10-15

Then the LORD said, “I will surely return to you about this time next year, and Sarah your wife will have a son.” Now Sarah was listening at the entrance to the tent, which was behind him. Abraham and Sarah were already old and well advanced in years, and Sarah was past the age of childbearing. So Sarah laughed to herself as she thought, “After I am worn out and my master is old, will I now have this pleasure?”

Then the LORD said to Abraham, “Why did Sarah laugh and say, ‘Will I really have a child, now that I am old?’ Is anything too hard for the LORD? I will return to you at the appointed time next year and Sarah will have a son.” Sarah was afraid, so she lied and said, “I did not laugh.” But he said, “Yes, you did laugh.”

It seems that Abraham was not totally sold on the idea of having Sarah as a mother since he already had his substitute, Ishmael, ready to do the job. However, the God who does not change, continued to speak faith concerning Isaac, even before he was born.

Genesis 17:17-19

Abraham fell facedown; he laughed and said to himself, “Will a son be born to a man a hundred years old? Will Sarah bear a child at the age of ninety?” And Abraham said to God, “If only Ishmael might live under your blessing!” Then God said, “Yes, but your wife Sarah will bear you a son, and you will call him Isaac. I will establish my covenant with him as an everlasting covenant for his descendants after him.”

Within one year of Abraham having his name changed, Isaac was finally born. God was faithful to His promise in spite of their lack of faith concerning His plan to bring it about. Remember Hebrews 11:6, faith is what pleases God, because faith requires that we do things His way. The Lord delights in making the impossible, possible, because we see Him get all the glory. If we could change our situation around ourselves, like the “Ishmael” deal, it would not require any faith in God. A fleshly alternative to God’s plan is like substituting God’s gold for our brass.

Genesis 21:1-7

Now the LORD was gracious to Sarah as he had said, and **the LORD did for Sarah what he had promised.** Sarah became pregnant and bore a son to Abraham in his old age, **at the very time God had promised him.** Abraham gave the name Isaac to the son Sarah bore him. When his son Isaac was eight days old, Abraham circumcised him, as God commanded him. Abraham was a hundred years old when his son Isaac was born to him. Sarah said, “God has brought me laughter, and everyone who hears about this will laugh with me.” And she added, “Who would have said to Abraham that Sarah would nurse children? Yet I have borne him a son in his old age.”

Here is a little side note. Many have wondered why God choose Abraham anyway? What was it about Abraham, that made him so special among all the men of the earth at that time? Of course, the Bible has the answer to these questions. Ultimately, the Lord knew Abraham would believe Him, and that belief was substantiated by his **obedience** to do what God had told him to do.

Genesis 18:18-19

“Abraham will surely become a great and powerful nation, and all nations on earth will be blessed through him. For I have chosen him, so that **he will direct his children and his household after him to keep the way of the LORD** by doing what is right and just, so that the LORD will bring about for Abraham what he has promised him.”

Hebrews 11:8-10

By faith Abraham, when called to go to a place he would later receive as his inheritance, **obeyed and went**, even though he did not know where he was going. By faith he made his home in the promised land like a stranger in a foreign country; he lived in tents, as did Isaac and Jacob, who were heirs with him of the same promise. **For he was looking forward to the city with foundations, whose architect and builder is God.**

Abraham, never did receive the full manifestation of the promises of God in his lifetime. God’s covenant with mankind through Abraham, will not fully be consummated until Revelations 21:1-5 takes place, after the millennium. God’s Word will continue to work even after thousands of years have passed, until it is all fulfilled, even to the last little iota. Even still, Abraham was faithful to talk about the promises of God to his children, and they in turn have passed them down from generation to generation, even to this day!

Matthew 24:35 - Heaven and earth will pass away , but my words will never pass away.

Hebrews 11:11-16

By faith Abraham, even though he was past age- and Sarah herself was barren- was enabled to become a father because **he considered him faithful who had made the promise.** And so from this one man, and he as good as dead, came descendants as numerous as the stars in the sky and as countless as the sand on the seashore. **All these people were still living by faith when they died.**

They did not receive the things promised; they only saw them and welcomed them from a distance. And they admitted that they were aliens and strangers on earth. People who say such things show that they are looking for a country of their own. If they had been thinking of the country they had left, they would have had opportunity to return. Instead, they were longing for a better country-a heavenly one. **Therefore God is not ashamed to be called their God, for he has prepared a city for them.**

With all this background I have shared so far concerning Abraham, I believe we have gained a greater appreciation of the meaning of this principle of faith, “calling call those things that be not as though they were.” God is our example, of how He deliberately renamed Abram to Abraham, as a father of many nations, even before he had a son.

Romans 4:17

As it is written: “I have made you a father of many nations.” He is our father in the sight of God, in whom he believed- the God who gives life to the dead and **calls things that are not as though they were.**

We are not lying when we speak the truth of God’s Word over the circumstances of life: like calling ourselves healed when symptoms plague our body, prosperous while the bills keep piling up, full of peace and joy while the world around us is falling to pieces. If we are to follow the Father’s example with Abraham, we need to change how we see ourselves, from loser, poor, weak, afraid, and victim to winner, rich, strong, courageous, and victor in Jesus. For this is what God’s Word says about us. So let’s find these promises and put our name in there, personalize them, confess them and receive God’s abundant provision of grace; in order to reign in life through Jesus Christ- Romans 5:17.

This is what Abraham came to realize, just take God at His Word and obey Him. Taking the Lord’s lead, Abraham called himself a father of many nations even before he was one! So let’s call ourselves healed, prosperous, and full of victory, even before we see it physically in our life. For faith will add the substance (Healing, Financial and Victory substance) of what we hope for in our life- Hebrews 11:1.

Romans 4:16

Therefore, the promise comes by faith, so that it may be by grace and may be guaranteed to all Abraham’s offspring- not only to those who are of the law but also to those who are of the faith of Abraham. He is the father of us all.

Galatians 3:6-9, 22

Consider Abraham: “He believed God, and it was credited to him as righteousness.” Understand, then, that those who believe are children of Abraham. The Scripture foresaw that God would justify the Gentiles by faith, and **announced the gospel in advance to Abraham: “All nations will be blessed through you.” So those who have faith are blessed along with Abraham, the man of faith. But the Scripture declares that the whole world is a prisoner of sin, **so that what was promised, being given through faith in Jesus Christ, might be given to those who believe.****

A) What Is Unseen Is Eternal!

2 Corinthians 4:18

So we fix our eyes not on what is seen, but on what is unseen. For what is seen is temporary, but what is unseen is eternal.

Faith in the heart is a spiritual force inside the human spirit which comes from the Word God. Faith in the heart gives the human spirit the ability to conceive what God has promised, then after conception, eventually there will be a manifestation. The promises in the Bible are God's will for you and me. But they will not come to us just because they are in the Bible.

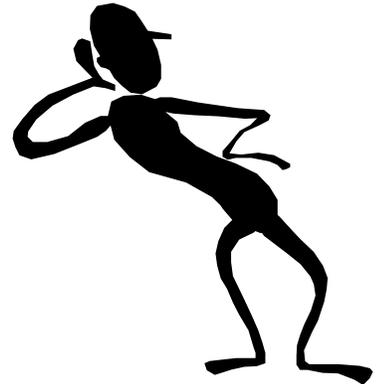
We must call them into our life. We need to check up on ourselves. Perhaps we have been calling things for years, and that is the reason we get into bad situations. We have been calling the wrong things. To change our situation, all we have to do is switch over to the positive side of confession, and consistently speak God's Word over life's circumstances.

Luke 17:6

He replied, "If you have faith as small as a mustard seed, you can say to this mulberry tree, 'Be uprooted and planted in the sea,' and it will obey you."

Confession is a method of calling things that are not as though they were. If I am sick, I will confess, "I am healed by the stripes of Jesus. I am delivered from the authority of darkness. I am redeemed from the curse of the law." I am calling my body well, and healthy on the authority of God's Word.

I am not suggesting that we go around denying sickness. As children of God, we are not called to become door mats for the devil to walk on. Rather, Jesus put him under our feet, in order to walk all over the devil- Luke 10:19. No, we deny the right for sickness and disease to exist in our body when Jesus redeemed us from it, as He did sin! We need to put into practice God's method, the principles of the Kingdom of God- let's start calling our body well. Note: We should use wisdom when *calling things that be not as though they were in public, because people will misunderstand us, and think we are either crazy or lying.*



1 Corinthians 1:28

He chose the lowly things of this world and the despised things-and the things that are not- to nullify the things that are.

When we call things into manifestation, we in fact are nullifying the problem that exists. When a problem exists, we don't deny that the problem exists. If our body is sick with symptoms, we don't deny it, rather we can say, "I have some symptoms present in my body, but I believe that right now, God's Word is affecting a healing and a cure, and is driving every trace of it out of my body in Jesus' Name!" Some people who misunderstand this message think, if they are hurting, they should say, "I'm not sick." Just denying the symptoms won't make us well. In fact, that could be a lie. There is a difference between a lie and a confession. We will go more into depth about that in a little bit.

Matthew 17:20

He replied, "Because you have so little faith. I tell you the truth, if you have faith as small as a mustard seed, you can say to this mountain, 'Move from here to there' and it will move. Nothing will be impossible for you."

This is how faith works, it first starts very small as a seed- speaking words. In the natural, parents never receive their child full grown; likewise initially our faith will not start out fully developed either. Faith in the heart is the ability of the human spirit to conceive the seed of God's Word and carry it for a period of time as it grows; until the manifestation of the promise of God is revealed in our lives.

Mark 4:26-29

He also said, "This is what the kingdom of God is like. A man scatters seed on the ground. Night and day, whether he sleeps or gets up, the seed sprouts and grows, though he does not know how. All by itself the soil produces grain — first the stalk, then the head, then the full kernel in the head. As soon as the grain is ripe, he puts the sickle to it, because the harvest has come."

Just as a child grows inside his/her mother's womb, so the Word of God grows in our spirit. This is what Jesus was teaching concerning the Kingdom of God in Mark chapter four. The Kingdom grows inside of us as we speak God's Word out of our mouth- seeds are being planted for a glorious harvest of grace. The Word of God is the seed or the embryo. It grows and develops in the womb of our spirit. That is also the way our faith develops. When we are born again, we didn't receive fully developed faith, but just a measure. The Christian experience is all about increasing and developing that measure many times over.

Romans 12:3

For by the grace given me I say to every one of you: Do not think of yourself more highly than you ought, but rather think of yourself with sober judgment, in accordance with the measure of faith God has given you.

2 Corinthians 10:15

Our hope is that, as your faith continues to grow, our area of activity among you will greatly expand...

2 Thessalonians 1:3-4

We ought always to thank God for you, brothers, and rightly so, because your faith is growing more and more, and the love every one of you has for each other is increasing.

Every Christian starts out with the same measure of faith when they are born again of incorruptible seed of God's Word- 1 Peter 1:23. So the only way we can measure our faith is to measure the amount of Word that is in our spirit. The Kingdom within us grows as our faith continues to grow through God's Word.

B) Bible Confession Is Not Lying!

Romans 4:18-21

Against all hope, Abraham in hope believed and so became the father of many nations, just as it had been said to him, "So shall your offspring be." Without weakening in his faith, **he faced the fact that his body was as good as dead- since he was about a hundred years old- and that Sarah's womb was also dead. Yet he did not waver through unbelief regarding the promise of God, but was strengthened in his faith and gave glory to God, being fully persuaded that God had power to do what he had promised.**

God and Abraham were calling those things that were not as though they were. The Bible does not say, they were calling those things that were as though they were not. Abraham did not go around saying, "I'm not old, I'm not old." If he had said that, he would have been lying. Some have never understood the difference between a lie and a confession. A confession is based on the Word of God. It may seem to the world as a lie, but if God said it, how could we be lying by saying what God has already said in His Word? Abraham did not deny the facts by saying, "I'm not old." He called it the way God had called it, and his confession (Agreement with what God already said), overcame the natural facts, which stated that it was impossible for him and Sarah to have a child together.

Confess What God's Word Says Is True Concerning Your Situation. Truth Overcomes Facts!

Some say, "Those who get over into this confession business, are just trying to act like God." I would rather act like God (Ephesians 5:1) than to act like the devil- John 8:42-44; 1 John 3:7-10. If I am acting like God, by saying what God has already said about me in the Bible, then those who are saying what the devil is saying through doubt, fear, and unbelief, are acting like the devil.

“How Can You Say Your Body Is Well When It Appears That You Are Sick?”



That is a logical question, but we need to understand that, when symptoms are in our body or we have problems in our life, that's all the more reason that we should confess the promises of God. We are calling for the things we don't have. We are calling the provision into manifestation. There is no need to call for something that was already manifest. I am not trying to convince others that I am not sick, or that I am not hurting. If I were, I would be lying.

If I try to convince others that I already have something that I don't literally have, then I would be lying. But when others hear me say, "thank God, my body is well, I am healed, I am delivered, I am free from sickness and disease, and I am calling my body well in Jesus' Name," I am just calling things that are not and though they were on the authority of God's Word; therefore, I am not lying. When we make faith confessions, they are for our benefit, not for anybody else. In most cases, it would be better if others would not hear our faith confessions less they misunderstand it and get offended. So let's keep calling for the promises of God that are not currently manifest in our life until they do!

2 Corinthians 5:7- We live by faith, not by sight.

Psalms 107:2- Let the redeemed of the Lord say this - those he redeemed from the hand of the foe.

When we call health into our body, it will nullify sickness and disease. When we call for abundance into our finances, it will nullify lack- good stuff isn't it?

Calling things that be not is acting on the faith principles found in Mark 11:23. We are not denying the things that exist, by calling for something else in its place; call it the way God promised it would be. Call the promise into manifestation. Use God's method to change the problems that exist.

Joel 3:10- Let the weakling say, "I am strong!"

Worry Is Simply Calling Things That Are Not As Though They Were, On The Negative Side.

Judges 6:12-16

When the angel of the LORD appeared to Gideon, he said, "**The LORD is with you, mighty warrior.**" "But sir," Gideon replied, "if the LORD is with us, why has all this happened to us? Where are all his wonders that our fathers told us about when they said, 'Did not the LORD bring us up out of Egypt?' But now the LORD has abandoned us and put us into the hand of Midian." The LORD turned to him and said, "**Go in the strength you have and save Israel out of Midian's hand. Am I not sending you?**" "But Lord," Gideon asked, "how can I save Israel? My clan is the weakest in Manasseh, and I am the least in my family." The LORD answered, "**I will be with you, and you will strike down all the Midianites together.**"

Gideon's response was from a natural point of view, he was just saying it like it was. However, the Lord said it the way it was not. Does that mean God was lying! Romans 3:3-4 "...let God be true, and every man a liar." No, the Lord was operating in faith as He wants us too.

Judges 6:36-40

Gideon said to God, "**If you will save Israel by my hand as you have promised-** look, I will place a wool fleece on the threshing floor. If there is dew only on the fleece and all the ground is dry, then I will know that you will save Israel by my hand, as you said."

And that is what happened. Gideon rose early the next day; he squeezed the fleece and wrung out the dew- a bowlful of water. Then Gideon said to God, "**Do not be angry with me. Let me make just one more request. Allow me one more test with the fleece.** This time make the fleece dry and the ground covered with dew." That night God did so. Only the fleece was dry; all the ground was covered with dew.

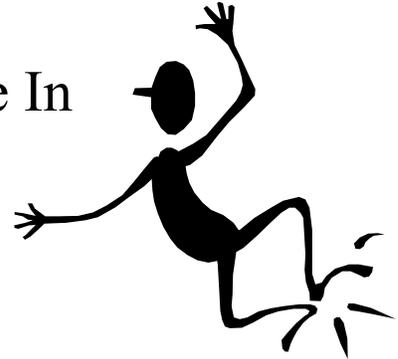
Gideon continues on in the natural later on and asks for a sign, just to make sure God was not lying about what He had promised him. God is so merciful, in the Old Testament He permitted Himself to be subjected to these carnal tests. However, He expects more of His children in the New Testament to walk by faith and to be led by the Spirit of God, and not by fleeces.

Luke 12:47-48

"That servant who knows his master's will and does not get ready or does not do what his master wants will be beaten with many blows. But the one who does not know and does things deserving punishment will be beaten with few blows. From everyone who has been given much, much will be demanded; and from the one who has been entrusted with much, much more will be asked."

If we are going to trust in a fleece or some other physical sign, just mark it down, we are going to get fleeced. The devil can manipulate circumstances in the natural in order to deceive us, so we move out of the will of God. Rather let's trust the inward witness of the Holy Spirit as New Covenant children of God, He will bear witness with our spirit what God's will is for our life in every day decisions- Romans 8:14.

“Take God’s Word For Your Hope In Any Hopeless Situation!”



Some say, “That is just a bunch of positive thinking, mind over matter, and Christian science stuff.” No, they are principles from the Bible, and the power of His Word over all matter. Let's look at a few examples in the ministry of Jesus where He spoke faith over situations that faced Him:

Mark 5:39-40

He went in and said to them, “Why all this commotion and wailing? **The child is not dead but asleep.**” But they laughed at him.

John 11:11-15

After he had said this, he went on to tell them, “**Our friend Lazarus has fallen asleep; but I am going there to wake him up.**” His disciples replied, “Lord, if he sleeps, he will get better.” Jesus had been speaking of his death, but his disciples thought he meant natural sleep. So then he told them plainly, “**Lazarus is dead,** and for your sake I am glad I was not there, so that you may believe. But let us go to him.”

John 2:19-21

Jesus answered them, “**Destroy this temple, and I will raise it again in three days.**” The Jews replied, “It has taken forty- six years to build this temple, and you are going to raise it in three days?” But the temple he had spoken of was his body.

Concerning this principle of faith, of calling those things that be not as though they were, we are talking about calling the promises of God. It is not about something God does not want us to have, but about things that God has already given to us. Some say, “You are just playing make believe, confessing all of these things.” No, faith brings into manifestation the substance of things hoped for or desired- Hebrews 11:1-3. There are three main methods by which this principle is expressed:

- 1) By praying the answer
- 2) Through confession of the Word of God
- 3) By our actions which are displayed on a daily basis

Begin Speaking The End Result!

C) Don't Pray The Problem!

The temptation comes for us to share our problems with others. Unfortunately, all this does is reinforce the problem. Remember the cardinal truth of faith, "Faith comes by hearing the Word." Sharing the problem is calling those things that are as though they are, but more of it! Obviously, this would be a big mistake to make. So by saying things as they appear, we are just reinforcing the present circumstances.

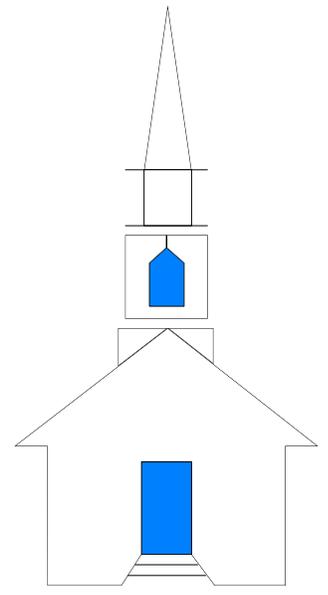
To discuss the details of our problems with our friends, and then try to release faith in the promises of God is being double minded, and James 1:5-8 says we should not expect to receive anything from God as a result. Friends, these are the things that are defeating us! Let's learn how to control our mouth. Speak only that which is in agreement with God's Word, consistently, without undermining our faith confessions with a bunch of double talk. We do foolish things sometimes, thinking that we are being honest, transparent and authentic. People who practice this, will often say, "Well brother, I am just telling it like it is. You know, you have to say it like it is." That is true if we want more of that problem in our life. Others may say, "Well, how am I suppose to give a prayer request without telling them what the problem is?" Good point, I believe it's all in the emphasis we place on our wording. Are we magnifying the problem or God, are we telling how horrible the situation is or are we releasing faith in God's Word, which is going to change the situation around.

Remember, faith does not deny the facts, it presents the truth (the promises in God's Word), that will change the facts and circumstances of life. Let's begin confessing what we want, and not what we have. If we have to share some of the details to a prayer partner, keep them brief, spend more time talking about what God is doing for in the situation, rather than what the devil is doing. We need to realize that repeating the problem over and over again, is not God's method. The Bible method is to call the things that are not manifest, and keep calling them until they are manifest. If we find ourselves always making dumb decisions, let's begin confessing that we have the mind of Christ, and the wisdom of God for every situation. Don't keep saying it like it is. Let's say things the way that we want them to be, based on the Word of God. We proclaim these things based on the Scriptures! God's method is to call for things God has already promised in the Bible, which are not presently manifest and operative in our life.

Suppose Jesus revealed Himself in the natural, and walked down the aisle of our Church some Sunday morning. Once He reaches the front of the Church, He turns around, and says in a loud authoritative voice, "From now on, everything that you say shall immediately come to pass!" He then walks back out of the Church as He had originally came in. I suppose sister Sally would turn to her husband and say, "Well George, that just tickles me to death," and instantly she falls over dead. Then deacon John, seeing that sister Sally just fell over dead, says to himself, "I just can't believe it, what's this Church coming too. I suppose everyone else is going to fall dead as well!" I'll leave the rest of this story up to your imagination to finish. We need to be as serious about our choice of words as we do our actions. There are blessings and consequences to what we say about situations in our life and beyond.

He who guards his mouth and his tongue keeps himself from calamity.

Proverbs 21:23



We must put these principles into practice as a lifestyle, if we are to develop in them, and it's not going to happen overnight. We have to discipline ourselves to believe the things that we say will come to pass. We have to cut out of our conversation, all the foolishness if we are going to develop in faith- Ephesians 4:29. It's really quite simple, just learn to say what you mean, and mean what you say. Let your "Yes" be "Yes" and your "No" be "No"- James 5:12.

Develop faith in your words, so that what you say, you expect to come to pass. Learn to release faith in every word you speak. But if you see the problem, if you believe the problem, if you talk the problem, then you will end up being the problem.

3. Believe You Receive

Mark 11:24

Therefore I tell you, whatever you ask for in prayer, believe that you have received it, and it will be yours.

This principle, "**Believe that you have received it**" is such a crucial facet to the whole area of operating in the, "Spirit of Faith." Once we have released the Spirit of Faith through the confession of God's Word out of our mouth, the vital process of standing in faith until the manifestation of the promise begins. This is where the real fight of faith begins- 1 Timothy 1:18; 6:12.

For example, in the matter of giving and receiving (Philippians 4:15), when we give, we set a law in motion. Every time we give to God's work, for the sake of the Gospel, in obedience to Jesus, it will come back to us multiplied- Luke 6:38. However, the problem is that sometimes people don't understand that; therefore, they do not believe it. The return may come all right, but they miss it, because they were not looking for it. Opportunity for blessing will always come. But we can miss out on it, if we are not looking for it, if we are not believing for it. Paul talked about the matter of "Giving and Receiving," but most ministers only talk about the first part- giving. That is only half of the message, we need to be just as proficient in how to receive or make withdrawals as we do in giving and making deposits- it's not automatic as some may think.

We should always have our faith out there expecting a harvest for the seed we sow. In the natural, farmers do as much. Some have just pitched their offering in the bucket, and said, "Well, I guess it's all gone now or up to the Lord. I will never see that again, Oh well (Sigh). But I guess I'll get a reward for it when I get to heaven, in the sweet bye and bye. It will be wonderful then. I'll get all of these riches I'm storing up in heaven." **WHAT WOULD YOU DO WITH THEM THERE?** What about the here and now? What are we going to do about the bills that needs to be paid! What about the work of God that needs to be done throughout the earth?

Unfortunately, some religious folk, become so heavenly minded, that they are no earthly good- they relegate everything to the future and spiritualize God's blessings for our everyday life. These well meaning people, get all kinds of squirrely notions and goofy thinking that is not in the Bible. If a promise of God mentions anything remotely relating to meeting some physical, natural or material need, they are notorious for rationalizing, and relegating the promise into the distant future when we all get to heaven.

Never mind reading the context of the passage, that clearly supports the interpretation, that the promise is referring to meeting our needs right here and now. God is the God of Today, not tomorrow- Hebrews 3:7; 2 Corinthians 6:2

God's method is to take an eternal force of faith and change the things that are seen- the temporal things according to 2 Corinthians 4:18. The word, "temporal" means, "subject to change." That means, if we can see it, feel it, touch it, or taste it, then we can take our faith and the Word of God, and change it. Thank God, all evil in this world is temporary. There is no permanent evil condition on this earth that will last forever. For example, sickness is subject to change. Poverty is subject to change according to the Word of God. However, God never changes, nor does the eternal truths of His Word.

Faith Always Sees The End Results!

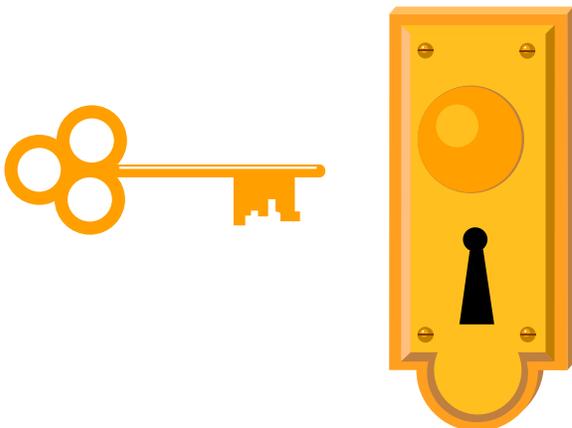
In Isaiah 43:26, it says, "Put me in remembrance..." In other words, call Him to remembrance of what He already said. The Father loves it when we speak to Him in regards to His Word. It is not so much for His benefit as it is ours. It makes our faith stronger, and we have the assurance that His Word will not return to Him void- Isaiah 55:11. If we pray the answer, our faith will grow, while we are praying. If we pray the problem, our fears will grow while we are praying. Some Christians destroy their faith by their own praying.

When we study the life, and ministry of Jesus, we will notice that He always guarded His conversation, so He would not undo what He had already declared in the beginning. For example, in the instance where Jesus raised His friend Lazarus from the dead. In John 11:11 Jesus said, "*Our friend Lazarus has fallen asleep; but I am going there to wake him up.*" Jesus declared from the beginning that His friend would be raised from the dead. Once Jesus got there, He never backed down from His earlier declaration, John 11:39, "*Take away the stone.*"

When Jesus made these declarations, all kind of doubts began to fly from the people around Him, but His response was, "*Did I not tell you that if you believed, you would see the glory of God?*" Now, get this next statement Jesus had made, "*Father, I thank you that you **have heard me**. I knew that you always hear me, but I said this for the benefit of the people standing here, that they may believe that you sent me.*" When it comes to prayer, we must know that God has heard us. The secret of knowing if God has heard us, is to pray in line with God's Will, which is God's Word. Jesus had fulfilled the conditions of, "Believe before you receive" when He had spoke in faith.

1 John 5:14-15

This is the confidence we have in approaching God: that if we ask anything according to his will, he hears us. And if we know that he hears us- whatever we ask- we know that we have what we asked of him.



After we pray, don't pray again. God either heard us or He didn't. If we keep asking for prayer, our confession is saying that God did not hear us the first time. These are the things that are whipping us. By confessing the same old prayer request over and over again, we are falling under the condemnation of the heathen, through vain repetition- Matthew 6:7. A man would never get a house built, if he put the foundation down one day, and took it up the next, repeating the act again and again.

Take a farmer for instance who goes out into his fields and plants seed, only the next day to dig it up again, repeating the same act again and again. Neither of these men will ever see the fulfillment of their endeavors; neither will we if we go on praying on and on in the same manner. When we pray, let's claim the promise that God has heard us the first time, and has already answered our prayer. Now is the time to thank Him for it, and go on our way as though we already have it, because technically speaking, we really do from a spiritual point of view. In time, it will manifest in the natural realm, if we hold fast to our confession of faith, by saying the same thing. Once we say God has heard our prayer, never go back on it. It doesn't matter what we see, feel, or what our senses tell us. Stay with it, take hold of it with the tenacity of a bull dog, and don't turn loose.

For example, in the area of physical healing, Satan can camouflage a few symptoms, and try to make us believe that we are not healed. In the first place, he has no authority over us as Christians. All he can do is try to get us to believe the symptoms, and go by our senses. The wrong confession, defeats us, not only by our words, but by our actions- the decisions we make determine our destiny. Our corresponding action would dictate that we carry ourselves as though the answer came the minute we had prayed. Start confessing what God says is true in the Word, even if it totally contradicts natural circumstances. When it comes to speaking God's Word we can do that over and over again, but we don't want to take that same approach with prayer. The prayer of faith is prayed once, then thanksgiving and the sacrifice of praise unto the Lord should follow until the answer manifests.

Remember, God speaks the thing desired (Genesis 1:2-3), not what He does not desire. He calls for the thing that is not manifest, which in turn brings to nothing the persisting condition. Likewise, we are to imitate our Heavenly Father and call for the things that we desire according to God's Word- Mark 11:24. As you study the Bible, you will notice that God never does anything without saying it first. Faith always sees the end results. We are everything the Word of God says we are; therefore, everything we say, should be in agreement with God's Word.

Please don't become discouraged when starting out on this faith journey, that you hit a few bumps in the road- we all do! Someone might say, "but I prayed for somebody, and they died." What does that have to do with it? All God expects of us is to use our faith in every situation we come up against. However, we might as well get use to it, we are not always going to be in control of every situation or circumstance. When dealing with prayer for other people, there are so many other variables involved, primarily their free will, and the consequences for certain actions. We have authority in our own house (Acts 16:31), but not in the someone else's house. We can change our own personal world, but we can't just barge into someone else's, and alter their world without their permission.

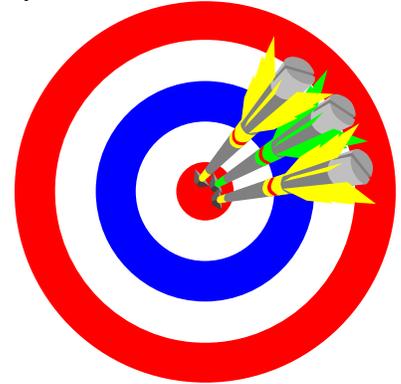
A) The Eye Of Faith

The eye of faith always sees itself with the answer in hand before it has ever manifested. We have been saying that faith always speaks the end result. If it's not now, it's not faith. People are going to misunderstand us as we begin to operate in this realm, but if we want to walk in the Kingdom of God with our head held high because of what Jesus has done for us, we need to learn to walk by faith. God's Word gives us the assurance that the answer is on its way when we activate it by His grace and through our faith in God's Word.

Have you ever connected faith and your imagination together- you should, the two go hand in hand. I believe that imagination, and the ability to dream is a God given capacity. This creative expression from God is a result of man being made in the image and likeness of God according to Genesis 1:26- to dream, create and innovate.

In the natural, when we make plans to do something, like go on vacation; usually mental images are created first, through our mind's eye we see ourselves having a good time. We start plotting out the details, the road trip etc. More importantly, we start talking about it as though we were already there, that is how God created us to function and that is how faith works- we talk ourselves into the blessings of God! The same is true when one operates in the "Spirit of Faith." Faith sees the answer, and makes plans as though it has already happened. Our conversation speaks in present tense as though we already got it. Faith is the creative force of God that fashions the dreams of God into reality, the same is true for us.

We hear people talk about, "Blind Faith," but faith is not blind. Faith always sees. Faith always sees through the storm. Instead of getting centered on the present, faith always sees the end result. Faith has its sights fixed on a specific target, and is not distracted by peripheral things. In Romans 14:23 says, "*And everything that does not come from faith is sin.*" A simple definition for sin is, "to miss the mark." Therefore, faith sets its sights on the promises of God, and hits the bulls eye every time.



Mark 4:35-40

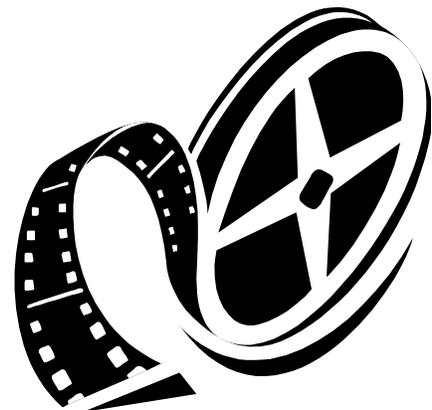
That day when evening came, he said to his disciples, "Let us go over to the other side." Leaving the crowd behind, they took him along, just as he was, in the boat. There were also other boats with him. A furious squall came up, and the waves broke over the boat, so that it was nearly swamped. Jesus was in the stern, sleeping on a cushion. The disciples woke him and said to him, "Teacher, don't you care if we drown?" He got up, rebuked the wind and said to the waves, "Quiet! Be still!" Then the wind died down and it was completely calm. He said to his disciples, "Why are you so afraid? Do you still have no faith?"

Jesus made a declaration to the disciples, "let us go to the other side." Those words were so full of faith, that nothing in all creation could keep them from coming to pass. Obviously, the disciples did not take to heart that those words, were words of destiny. It must happen that way! Jesus was no liar, the fact He said it, meant that it must come to pass. The disciples had no reason to fear, regardless of the severity of the storm. The disciples failed to see themselves as going over to the other side. Fear had seized their imagination, and all they could see themselves doing was going down with the ship. Our imagination will reflect whether we are flowing in faith or wallowing in fear.

2 Corinthians 10:5 (KJV)

Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ.

The Greek word for "Imaginations"- A computation, reasoning thought. Concerning the Scripture above, the context depicts a spiritual act of warfare when we cast down imaginations that are contrary to God's Word. The enemy will attempt to plant thoughts of failure and defeat in our minds. The devil will go to great lengths to play the movies of doubt and fear through our minds if we allow him to. What we need to do, is change the channel to God's station, the Word of God. Allow the Holy Spirit to use God's Word to display previews of success, victory and blessing. Start making plans to succeed!



Start Making Plans To Succeed Through Your Faith And Your Imagination!

Have you ever noticed in the Gospels, how Jesus often made reference to the fact that some day He was going up to Jerusalem to be crucified, and arise on the third day- Luke 9:22; 13:32; 18:33; 24:7, 25-27. Faith had His footsteps marked out to fulfill the Scriptures. Luke 9:51 says, *“As the time approached for him to be taken up to heaven, Jesus resolutely set out for Jerusalem.”* The Greek word for resolutely- 4741. *sterizo*, stay-rid'-zo; from a presumed der. of G2476 (like G4731); to set fast, i.e. (lit.) to turn resolutely in a certain direction, or (fig.) to confirm:--fix, (e-) establish, steadfastly set, strengthen. Fix your sights on the promise, and faith will get you there

To believe in our heart means that we will also speak that Word out of our mouth. The two principles go hand in hand. If we believe it, we will say it and that is how we receive it.

Romans 10:10- *“It’s with your heart that you believe. It’s with your mouth that you confess.”*

Hear The Word- Faith Comes

Believe It In Your Heart- Faith Is Conceived

Confess It Out Of Your Mouth- Faith Is Released

When we pray, let’s believe that we receive the answer, that we have it now by faith; it’s mine, I take it now. Faith is the title deed, that it is our possession according to Hebrews 11:1. When Jesus rebuked the fig tree (Mark 11:13-14), notice that He spoke words. He did not pull out a machete in order to hack it to pieces. Notice also that Jesus did not ask the Father God to zap it. It is true that sometimes our prayers are directed upward as petitions, requesting things from the Father.

However, many times we need to release our faith in the Name of Jesus towards obstacles that stand in our way, like the devil. When a believer casts out a demon, does he lift his/her eyes to heaven, and ask the Father to cast the devil out? Is that how Jesus did it while on earth? No, Jesus operated as a man with authority, and He addressed the devil, and told him what to do. Jesus has delegated that authority to us, so we can deal with the devil the same way that Jesus did- Matthew 10:1, 8; 28:18-20; Mark 16:17; Luke 10:18-20.

I would like to present to you that it is not Scriptural to ask God for anything that He has already given us through the redemptive work of Jesus Christ. Take the new birth for example, Romans 10:10 does not say to pray the prayer of petition in order to receive salvation. That passage simple says, “Confess Jesus as Lord, and believe in your heart that God has raised him from the dead.” Often times the appropriate tact to take is to claim what already belongs to us in Jesus Name because of our redemption- 2 Peter 1:4.

Other times, a situation warrants that we use our God given authority in Jesus name, and demand the devil to get out of the way- John 14:13. If we need wisdom, then let’s ask God for it, because the Bible instructs us to do so- James 1:5.

If we need healing, just say “I claim healing for my body according to 1 Peter 2:24.” If we need strength, say “Body, be strengthened in Jesus’ Name according to Philippians 4:13.” Whatever God has promised us in His Word, we have the right to claim for our lives and say, “It’s mine, I receive it now!” John 14:13-14, *“And I will do whatever you ask in my name, so that the Son may bring glory to the Father. You may ask me for anything in my name, and I will do it.”*

Faith That Moves Mountains

- 176 -

Too many of God's children are laying around the pool of Bethesda waiting for the troubling of the waters- John 5:1-16. They are waiting for a spiritual handout, all the while Jesus is standing there saying, "Come and dine, I have a glorious table of redemption for you to feast on, and to be satisfied. Oh do you need some healing, here have a loaf of it. You must be thirsty, have a drink of the Holy Spirit. Make sure you have thirds on prosperity pie!"

Unfortunately, many of God's children are subjected to spiritual poverty by the lies of man's religion. Groping around as beggars, the devil and his crowd just stand around, and laugh at us, as we make feeble attempts in being spiritual- sincere but ignorant. If we go through life barely getting along, it is not God's will or His fault. He has already made ample provision available for us to go through life in style, blessed to be a blessing- John 10:10; Romans 8:31-39; 1 Timothy 6:17; 3 John 2.

B) The Note Of Victory

Romans 4:18-21

Against all hope, Abraham in hope believed and so became the father of many nations, just as it had been said to him, "So shall your offspring be." Without weakening in his faith, he faced the fact that his body was as good as dead- since he was about a hundred years old- and that Sarah's womb was also dead. Yet he did not waver through unbelief regarding the promise of God, but was strengthened in his faith **and gave glory to God, being fully persuaded that God had power to do what he had promised.**

Faith sings best when there is nothing to sing about from a natural standpoint. When feelings of self-pity rise up, and the devil is playing a violin in the background, singing the blues, it's time to stand up in the Spirit, and stop the music. The music of faith always gives glory to God, even in the deepest test or trial. According to the Scripture above, faith is strengthened when we lift our voices to heaven in praise, and adoration to the Most High. Faith has its highest expression through praise and worship, it is the note of victory. A whining, complaining, and down trodden testimony is a sound of defeat that testifies that we



have already lost the battle. Remember, Paul and Silas in the jail at Philippi, they had every reason to gripe, and complain to God for having been treated so unfairly. Yet they gave volume to their faith in God by singing praises to the Lord at midnight while their feet were in stocks, and their backs were still bleeding from the beating they had endured that afternoon. What was the result? God showed up in an awesome way! Faith can turn seemingly impossible situations into opportunities for God to show Himself strong on our behalf, "*For the eyes of the LORD run to and fro throughout the whole earth, to show himself strong in the behalf of them whose heart is perfect toward him*" 2 Chronicles 16:9 KJV.

Acts 16:25-26

About midnight Paul and Silas were praying and **singing hymns to God, and the other prisoners were listening to them. Suddenly there was such a violent earthquake that the foundations of the prison were shaken. At once all the prison doors flew open, and everybody's chains came loose.**

Unit 12 Review:

Explain the principle of “Calling those things that be not as though they were?”

Does the Bible teach that the promises of God in this life are automatic- why or why not?

Why is Biblical confession not the same as lying?

Is there a danger for Christians to be guilty of praying the problem?

Explain the Biblical principle of “Believe you Receive.”

What is meant by the “Eye of Faith” and the “Note of Victory?”

D. Faith Works by Love

When one considers the prospect of living by faith, but dismisses the necessity to simultaneously walk in love, that is his/her own folly and shame. This person is in self-deception, and is just simply fooling oneself. Unfortunately the day of reckoning will come when they will fall flat on their face. I get a little disgusted when I see so called “faith people” walking around running rough shod over people. These self-absorbed individuals give the “Word of Faith” message a bad rap. They are a stumbling block to many, if not entirely turning them off from the faith message because of their carnal behavior.

At one time, the Lord had led my family and I to attend a full gospel church that had a reputation for ministering to disconnected believers, and drop outs from surrounding “Word of Faith” churches. Many of these wounded soldiers had been beaten up by overzealous “Faith People” who had the sensitivity of a bulldog when it came to helping people with their problems. These recovering believers had scars from those who would say, “well if you just had more faith!” or “if you are believing God, you need to throw your medicine away!” People who say things like that are so far off base, and out of step with the love of God.

Instead of condemning and accusing them, why don't they add their faith to others, and consider carrying each other's burdens. Any ways, when this new Church heard that my family and I had come from a “Word of Faith” Church, we immediately encountered a mild amount of persecution and mistrust. It took a couple of years of living before them in character and integrity before they received us totally. As a result, most of the congregation had re-evaluated the “Faith teaching” in light of the balanced examples that had been demonstrated in front of them by us and others.

It is important for us to note that there is a difference between boldness and arrogance. It is true that some “Word of Faith” believers have been misunderstood and categorized unfairly by the quick judgments of others. Thinking they were just being arrogant and proud, when really they were being bold in the Lord. How can we tell the difference? I would like to suggest to you that true godly boldness puts God in the middle, while arrogance gives all the credit to oneself.

For example, if we were to consider the bold stand Joshua and Caleb had took at Kadesh in Numbers 14:9, *“Only do not rebel against the LORD. And do not be afraid of the people of the land, because we will swallow them up. Their protection is gone, but the LORD is with us. Do not be afraid of them.”* Was that a statement of arrogance or faith? Notice that their faith statement is prefaced with “but the Lord is with us.” Yet the people of Israel wanted to stone them to death for trusting in God.

Let's look also at David when he had faced Goliath, David said to the Philistine in 1 Samuel 17:45-46, *“You come against me with sword and spear and javelin, but I come against you in the name of the LORD Almighty, the God of the armies of Israel, whom you have defied. This day the LORD will hand you over to me, and I'll strike you down and cut off your head. Today I will give the carcasses of the Philistine army to the birds of the air and the beasts of the earth, and the whole world will know that there is a God in Israel.”*

Was that a statement of faith or arrogance? David was exalting the Lord, and it was that faith in God that gave him the victory over Goliath. Unfortunately, David's older brother Eliab had accused David of arrogance before the big fight had begun in 1 Samuel 17:28, *“When Eliab, David's oldest brother, heard him speaking with the men, he burned with anger at him and asked, ‘Why have you come down here? And with whom did you leave those few sheep in the desert? I know how conceited you are and how wicked your heart is; you came down only to watch the battle.’”*

There seems to be a fine line between faith and arrogance! The truth of the matter is, it's just as wrong to be in error by falsely accusing a brother of arrogance who is walking in genuine faith, as it is to be arrogant about faith.

Let's now look at an example of arrogance that stinks to high heaven. The king of Assyria sends his field commander with an insulting message for King Hezekiah in 2 Kings 18:33-34, *"Has the god of any nation ever delivered his land from the hand of the king of Assyria? Where are the gods of Hamath and Arpad? Where are the gods of Sepharvaim, Hena and Ivvah? Have they rescued Samaria from my hand? Who of all the gods of these countries has been able to save his land from me? How then can the LORD deliver Jerusalem from my hand?"* Notice the obvious self-confidence, and arrogance. The apparent subject of the sentence was all centered around the King of Assyria's track record.

1. Faith, the Servant of Love

Our whole purpose and intent in exercising faith in the first place, is in response to the Love of God that has been shed abroad in our heart- Romans 5:5 *"And hope does not disappoint us, because God has poured out his love into our hearts by the Holy Spirit, whom he has given us."* God is love, and we are children of love, with His love nature as our new natures in Christ according to 2 Corinthians 5:17. It is our spiritual nature to walk in the Agape love of our spiritual Father- Ephesians 5:1-2. We have been re-born into His image and likeness- Ephesians 4:24, Colossians 3:9-14. The Word of God, is a love book of a love God.

To walk in obedience to His Word is to walk in love. Agape love does not originate with a feeling or emotion, but is a consistent lifestyle of obedience to the Father's commandments- John 14:21-24; 1 John 5:3. Just as Faith comes by hearing the Word, the Love of God is expressed by obeying the Word of God. Agape love gives us the reason, opportunity or occasion to use our faith. If the reason we are using our faith is not in response to the motives of love, we are wasting our time because,

Faith Works By Love!

Galatians 5:6

Greek Rendering For "Works":

1755. energeo, en-erg-eh'-o; from G1756; to be active, efficient:--do, (be) effectual (fervent), be mighty in, shew forth self, work (effectually in).

1756. energes, en-er-gace'; from G1722 and G2041: active, operative:--effectual, powerful.

The Amplified Renders Galatians 5:6:

"For [if we are] in Christ Jesus, neither circumcision nor uncircumcision counts for anything, but only faith activated, and energized, and expressed, and working through love."

The reverse is also true, "Love works by faith." Please give that statement some careful reflection.

1 John 5:2-3

This is how we know that we love the children of God: by loving God and carrying out his commands. This is love for God: to obey his commands. And his commands are not burdensome.

1 Thessalonians 1:3

We continually remember before our God and Father your work produced by faith, your labor prompted by love, and your endurance inspired by hope in our Lord Jesus Christ.

In reference to the Scripture above, the work of God is done by faith, but it's because of love that faith is called on in the first place! It was because of Love that God sent Jesus to the earth to become the Savior of the world. However, faith served God's purpose in bringing the plan of salvation to pass. It is interesting to see how faith and love work together in the New Testament- 1 Thessalonians 3:6; 5:8; 1 Timothy 1:14; 2 Timothy 1:13.

Colossians 1:3-5

We always thank God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, when we pray for you, because we have heard of your faith in Christ Jesus and of the love you have for all the saints— the faith and love that spring from the hope that is stored up for you in heaven and that you have already heard about in the word of truth...

The love of God produces compassion in us. Sympathy takes a poor third to godly compassion, because sympathy just feels sorry for the person who is suffering, but does not do anything about it. Compassion takes action to eliminate the suffering, and changes defeat into victory. The Love of God always calls on faith to do the job.

Without faith, love is left in frustration to just stand back, and observe human suffering; impotent to do anything about it. Faith is the arm of our spirit that brings the answer to any hopeless situation. For example, Matthew 14:14 (KJV) says, *“And Jesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their sick.”*

Faith Is The Servant Of Love, To Do It's Bidding Upon The Earth!

1 Corinthians 13:3

If I have the gift of prophecy and can fathom all mysteries and all knowledge, and **if I have a faith that can move mountains, but have not love, I am nothing.**

Concerning the last phrase of the above passage, the Amplified Bible states, **“a useless nobody.”** What a heavy statement, if that does not jerk the slack out of us, what will? The Bible makes it very clear, that Love is more important than faith in 1 Corinthians 13:13, *“And now these three remain: faith, hope and love. But the greatest of these is love.”* So if we consider ourselves “Faith People,” but do not walk in love towards others, we are actually nothing in particular in this world.

This is really convicting me as I am writing this out, “Lord forgive me for trying to move mountains, but not love others as You have loved me!” It really takes faith to love some people in this life. Just as faith works by love, love works by faith. Faith and Love work together as an inseparable team to fulfill God's will upon the earth.

2. Love, A Safeguard for your Faith

Without the love of God operating in my life, I would not have a prayer to operate in the Law of Faith. Love is so essential and critical for the successful operation of faith according to Biblical principles. God's laws always work in conjunction to the whole counsel of God's Word. If I am trying to operate in faith, and yet am violating other Biblical laws, my faith will be undermined and short-circuited from working. When I put the principles of the Love of God first place in my life, then I can rest assured that my faith will flow without a hitch.



Unfortunately, uninformed believers, get all excited about the possibilities of walking in faith, but negate the necessity of being rooted and grounded in love. These unbalanced, lopsided Christians go out, and make a big mess of things, offending others, and ultimately offend themselves when things do not work out. They have just made the most common mistake a believer can ever make. The greatest mark of maturity and balance, is for a believer to exhibit a consistent lifestyle of walking in the Love of God as Jesus demonstrated before us two thousand years ago. Love can be likened unto the lead filled control rods in a nuclear reactor. Without that safety device in place, we are going to experience melt-down in our life.

Romans 12:3

For by the grace given me I say to every one of you: **Do not think of yourself more highly than you ought, but rather think of yourself with sober judgment, in accordance with the measure of faith God has given you.**

1 Corinthians 8:1-3

We know that we all possess knowledge. **Knowledge puffs up, but love builds up. The man who thinks he knows something does not yet know as he ought to know. But the man who loves God is known by God.**

So let's remember to make it a priority to become established, and consistent in our love walk, otherwise we won't get very far down the road of walking by faith. Satan, is looking for an opportunity to puff us up in pride, offend and over in the ditch of self-sufficiency. If we yield to that temptation, we will become as a branch that is detached from the vine; withered up and fruitless- John chapter 15.

Let's now see how the Love of God really keeps us from Satan's traps that attempt to nullify, and destroy our faith. Mark this down, "Faith trembles in the light of broken fellowship with God." When we sin, our fellowship with God is instantly broken. I am not saying that we have lost our salvation, there is a difference between our relationship and our fellowship with the Lord.

We need to make it a point to immediately repent whenever we detect that we have sinned. Once we have repented, and confessed it to God according to 1 John 1:9, forget the mistake, and go on down the road in restored fellowship with God. Here is a golden rule for us all to observe, "be quick to forgive and quick to repent." This will keep us green and clean as the saying goes.

Romans 13:8-10

Let no debt remain outstanding, except the continuing debt to love one another, for he who loves his fellowman has fulfilled the law. The commandments, “Do not commit adultery,” “Do not murder,” “Do not steal,” “Do not covet,” and whatever other commandment there may be, are summed up in this one rule: “Love your neighbor as yourself.” **Love does no harm to its neighbor. Therefore love is the fulfillment of the law.**

Now it is important to note that it's Love that deters us from sin, which seeks to undermine our faith, because to walk in love is to walk in obedience to God's Word. The Word instructs us and empowers us to live above sin, the devil, and the world. I have heard people say, “I get so tired of seeing how people abuse faith for their own selfish interests.” I personally believe that God cannot be mocked, nor can faith be inherently abused.

Now the “Faith Message” can be tarnished by a few bad apples. However, if a person with wrong motives or someone is living in blatant sin, tries to operate in faith principles, it simply won't work. Like a person trying to start a car with a dead battery, nothing will happen. Now if they judge themselves, and repent, the Holy Spirit will give them a jump start and their faith will start working again, but not until it's just that simple.

1 John 3:19-22

This then is how we know that we belong to the truth, and how we set our hearts at rest in his presence **whenever our hearts condemn us**. For God is greater than our hearts, and he knows everything. Dear friends, **if our hearts do not condemn us**, we have confidence before God and receive from him anything we ask, because we obey his commands and do what pleases him.

<i>Love keeps us from the pitfalls of:</i>	Pride-	1 Corinthians 8:1-3
	Sin-	Romans 13:8-10
	Wrong Motives-	James 4:3
	Unforgiveness-	Mark 11:25-26

Wow! Love Is So Important To Faith!

E. Hope, The Anchor for the Soul

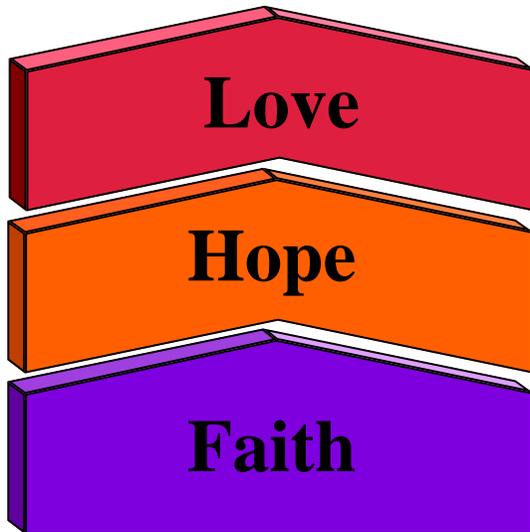
My main objective in this lesson is to unfold the awesome beauty of Bible Hope, and how it is an essential ingredient to the operation of faith. On the most part, hope has been pushed to obscurity by Charismatic and Word of Faith people. I personally believe, it is in response to an over emphasis of hope that has been placed by most main line denominations. If one was to study the content of their sermons, songs, and conversions, it usually centers around, “when we all get to heaven, won't it be great, but while we are here on earth, we have to struggle, scrape, and crawl until we get to those pearly gates.”

Their basic theology is that, “Christians won't receive much from God while on the earth except for a few hand outs when one really gets desperate; of course that is only if He takes a likening to you. However, if you remain true to God, even when those old sinners are prosperous, and going to hell, you will make it to heaven.” The bottom line is, it will be great over there in heaven, but while you are here on earth, it's up to you to get buy on your own.

I must admit, I am a product of such a transformation in my life, from main line denomination theology of “barely get along,” to taking God at His Word, where I can experience heaven on earth. Yet Bible Hope has a major role in the life of the believer, and is a significant component to the successful operation of faith. So let’s not throw out the baby out with the bath water. In order for us to attain maturity in Christ we need the, “full message of this new life” according to Acts 5:20. We need a proper mix, or balance of faith, hope and love. Let’s begin our study of Hope by first examining these three pillars of the Christian life in light of the Scriptures.

1 Thessalonians 1:3

We continually remember before our God and Father your work produced by faith, your labor prompted by love, and your endurance inspired by hope in our Lord Jesus Christ.



Love is the quality control, audit checks and balances. Love tests our motives, keeps our heart free from sin, and impurities. Love is our manager, that keeps the process flowing smoothly, and ensures that the end result is glorifying to God.

Hope provides the vision, goals and objectives- target values and mission statement. It’s the purpose for what we do, the plans, and blueprints for God’s dreams.

Faith brings to reality what hope dreams, while being supervised by love. Faith is the worker, laborer, producer of things hoped for. Faith makes things happen, the production or manufacturing department.

1. What we Already Know about Hope

Let’s briefly look at the general revelation the Body of Christ has concerning the subject of hope. It’s because of the hope of going to heaven and missing hell that most people come to know Jesus Christ as their Lord and Savior. This revelation is a key element to the gospel message. Not only that, but it is a major motivation in accepting Jesus as Lord- Heaven is great and hell is not!

Titus 2:11-13

For the grace of God that brings salvation has appeared to all men. It teaches us to say “No” to ungodliness and worldly passions, and to live self-controlled, upright and godly lives in this present age, while we wait for the blessed hope- the glorious appearing of our great God and Savior, Jesus Christ.

Colossians 1:27

To them God has chosen to make known among the Gentiles the glorious riches of this mystery, which is Christ in you, the hope of glory.

1 Peter 1:3, 13

Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ! In his great mercy he has given us new birth into a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, Therefore, prepare your minds for action; be self-controlled; set your hope fully on the grace to be given you when Jesus Christ is revealed.



Hope is called the helmet of our salvation, because the spiritual force of hope guards our minds from doubt and unbelief. Hope, keeps us from losing our heads, and going off into the deep end- 1 Corinthians 15:32.

Ephesians 6:17:

Take the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.

1 Thessalonians 5:8:

But since we belong to the day, let us be self-controlled, putting on faith and love as a breastplate, and the hope of salvation as a helmet.

Have you ever seen people without hope, they have no reason to live. People without hope, commit suicide every day- *“Hope deferred makes the heart sick, but a longing fulfilled is a tree of life”* according to Proverbs 13:12. Hope produces life, but a lack of it breeds death, despair and depression.

Ephesians 2:12

Remember that at that time you were separate from Christ, excluded from citizenship in Israel and foreigners to the covenants of the promise, **without hope and without God in the world.**

2. What you May not Know about Bible Hope

Hope can be defined as eager expectation. It provides us with the purpose and incentive to press on with God to the finish line. It keeps the goal, objective and destination before us as motivation to keep on keeping on.

Romans 8:19-21

The creation waits in **eager expectation for the sons of God to be revealed. For the creation was subjected to frustration, not by its own choice, but by the will of the one who subjected it, **in hope** that the creation itself will be liberated from its bondage to decay and brought into the glorious freedom of the children of God.**

Philippians 1:20

****I eagerly expect and hope** that I will in no way be ashamed, but will have sufficient courage so that now as always Christ will be exalted in my body, whether by life or by death.**

It is true, hope is future tense, while faith is now (present tense). When we speak in regards to the future, that is not faith, that is hope. Many Christians mistake faith for hope, and do not see the manifestation of the promise. Remember, hope does not bring about the answer, it only shows us what the answer is.

Faith's job is to manifest the promise and hope keeps us steady until the harvest comes. So when we are talking in terms of tomorrow, that is hope, because faith speaks in present tense vocabulary. It does matter what we say and how we say it, because the content of our conversation discloses what realm we are operating in- faith or hope, Philippians 2:19, 23.

Romans 8:23-25

Not only so, but we ourselves, who have the firstfruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly as we wait eagerly for our adoption as sons, the redemption of our bodies. **For in this hope we were saved. But hope that is seen is no hope at all.** Who hopes for what he already has? But if we hope for what we do not yet have, **we wait for it patiently.**

1680. elpis, el-pece'; from a prim. elpo (to anticipate, usually with pleasure); expectation (abstr. or concr.) or confidence:--faith, hope.

When we flow in Bible Hope, we are in a state of waiting patiently for the promise to be fulfilled through the force of faith. It's during this critical waiting period, when the promise of God is being fulfilled, that hope is our greatest friend. Hope keeps us from throwing away our confidence, and thus forfeiting the blessings of God. Once faith has been released, there is a season of time when hope takes its stand in the form of eager expectancy,

patient endurance, resting peace, and overflowing with joy in the God who cannot lie and is faithful to all His promises. This is the anchor of our soul, that keeps us steady in the midst of the worst of storms.

In essence, hope is our spiritual fortitude, strength, and endurance that will stand the test of time if we will hold fast to it. It truly is our anchor in the rough storms of hostile circumstances, and billowing waves of contradictory evidence that attack our minds with a flood of doubt and confusion.



Hebrews 6:13-19

When God made his promise to Abraham, since there was no one greater for him to swear by, he swore by himself, saying, "I will surely bless you and give you many descendants." **And so after waiting patiently, Abraham received what was promised.** Men swear by someone greater than themselves, and the oath confirms what is said and puts an end to all argument. Because God wanted to make the unchanging nature of his purpose very clear to the heirs of what was promised, **he confirmed it with an oath.** God did this so that, by two unchangeable things in which **it is impossible for God to lie,** we who have fled to take hold of the hope offered to us may be greatly encouraged. We have **this hope as an anchor for the soul, firm and secure.**

Hope denotes trust, confidence and security in the ability of God, resting on the surety of His promises. By now, you have probably already have come to the conclusion that hope, in many of its elements is very much akin to faith. However, there is a very distinct difference as explained on the previous page. It is absolutely amazing how hope produces character in the believer. Hope actually produces perseverance in us, as we wait and trust God for the manifestation of the promise.

Romans 5:3-5

Not only so, but we also rejoice in our sufferings, because we know that suffering produces perseverance; perseverance, character; and character, hope. And hope does not disappoint us, because God has poured out his love into our hearts by the Holy Spirit, whom he has given us.

2 Thessalonians 1:4

Therefore, among God's churches we boast about your perseverance and faith in all the persecutions and trials you are enduring.

James 5:7-8, 11

Be patient, then, brothers, until the Lord's coming. See how the farmer waits for the land to yield its valuable crop and how patient he is for the autumn and spring rains. You too, be patient and stand firm, because the Lord's coming is near. As you know, we consider blessed those who have persevered. You have heard of Job's perseverance and have seen what the Lord finally brought about. The Lord is full of compassion and mercy.

The Word Of God Produces Hope!

Hope comes from hearing God's Word. Hope is our greatest source of encouragement from God. The integrity, and inspiration of God's infallible Word provides the foundation from which Bible Hope is anchored. Worldly hope is a shallow maybe so, slim chance, lucky, one in a million, probably won't happen, wishful thinking, or roll of the dice. In other words, no substance, no security, no power. One might as well say, "twinkle, twinkle little star..." However, Bible hope is just the opposite of this inferior, cheap, worldly counterfeit. I have heard believers say, "well I just hope they get healed."

Unfortunately, that is only worldly hope, where sympathy and a sincere desire for the well being of another is being expressed- no power though. However, true Bible hope takes its desires and dreams to faith, where they are made a reality. Bible hope is a know so, a definite, impossible to be any other way, eager expectation that has its founding on the eternal never changing, sure Word of God. This is where hope gets its deep seated confidence, it's produced and generated from God's Holy written Word.

Romans 15:4-6

For everything that was written in the past was written to teach us, so that through **endurance and the encouragement of the Scriptures we might have hope. May the God who gives endurance and encouragement give you a spirit of unity among yourselves as you follow Christ Jesus, so that with one heart and mouth you may glorify the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.**

Romans 4:18-21

Against all hope, Abraham in hope believed and so became the father of many nations, just as it had been said to him, "So shall your offspring be." Without weakening in his faith, he faced the fact that his body was as good as dead--since he was about a hundred years old- and that Sarah's womb was also dead. Yet he did not waver through unbelief regarding the promise of God, but was strengthened in his faith and gave glory to God, being fully persuaded that God had power to do what he had promised.

Hope Is The Foundation From Which Faith Operates!

Faith is birthed out of the hope of receiving God's promises in our life. Remember Hebrews 11:1, "*Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.*" So which comes first, faith or hope? Since faith is designed to give substance to the framework or blueprint provided by hope, then the obvious answer is that it all begins with hope.

Colossians 1:3-5

We always thank God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, when we pray for you, because we have heard of your faith in Christ Jesus and of the love you have for all the saints- **the faith and love that spring from the hope that is stored up for you in heaven and that you have already heard about in the word of truth, the gospel...**

vs. 23

if you continue in your faith, **established and firm, not moved from the hope held out in the gospel. This is the gospel that you heard and that has been proclaimed to every creature under heaven, and of which I, Paul, have become a servant.**

Titus 1:2

A faith and knowledge **resting on the hope of eternal life, which God, who does not lie, promised before the beginning of time.**

Hebrews 10:23, 35

Let us hold unswervingly to the hope we profess, for he who promised is faithful. So do not throw away your confidence; it will be richly rewarded.

Finally, let us discover some other by-products of hope that is produced in our lives. I believe, that our understanding of Bible Hope has been enlarged as a result of this short teaching on the subject. Faith begins and ends with hope. Faith is the means to an end, and hope provides the reason for the end result. Without hope, faith stands idle look for something to do.

Hope Produces:

Purity:

1 John 3:3- Everyone who has this hope in him purifies himself, just as he is pure.

Comfort:

2 Corinthians 1:6-7- If we are distressed, it is for your comfort and salvation; if we are comforted, it is for your comfort, which produces in you patient endurance of the same sufferings we suffer. And our hope for you is firm, because we know that just as you share in our sufferings, so also you share in our comfort.

2 Thessalonians 2:16- May our Lord Jesus Christ himself and God our Father, who loved us and by his grace gave us eternal encouragement and good hope.

Joy:

Romans 5:2

Through whom we have gained access by faith into this grace in which we now stand. And we rejoice in the hope of the glory of God.

Romans 12:12- Be joyful in hope, patient in affliction, faithful in prayer.

Romans 15:13

May the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace as you trust in him, so that you may overflow with hope by the power of the Holy Spirit.

Boldness:

2 Corinthians 3:1- Therefore, since we have such a hope, we are very bold.

Vision:

Proverbs 13:12- Hope deferred makes the heart sick, but a longing fulfilled is a tree of life.

Proverbs 29:18- Where there is no revelation, the people cast off restraint

1 Corinthians 15:32- If the dead are not raised, "Let us eat and drink, for tomorrow we die."

F. By Grace Through Faith

Ephesians 2:8-9

For it is by grace you have been saved, through faith- and this not from yourselves, it is the gift of God- not by works, so that no one can boast.

The above Scripture is the divine formula from heaven. I use the word, "formula" not to diminish or degrade this spiritual truth. Just as Jesus used natural illustrations called parables to explain the principles of the kingdom of heaven, likewise spiritual laws, like formulas are constants that can be relied upon to operate in a consistent manner. Religious folk like to use the sovereignty of God to propose that God is always spontaneous, unpredictable, almost schizophrenic. Well God's Word is not that way and neither is the Lord.

However, the Bible shows that God is a God of order, and not confusion. God operates in conformity to His spoken Word, which is the same, unchangeable, and eternal. The universe is a reflection of its Creator. Therefore, I believe it would be appropriate to say that Ephesians 2:8-9 is a divine formula that unveils the secret to receiving anything from God- By Grace Through faith.

1. God's Part and Man's Part

There is a God-ward side and man-ward side to every spiritual transaction or encounter that we will ever have with God. God's side or responsibility is to supply His grace- Grace: God's power and ability in us to perform on our behalf, that which we are unable to do for ourselves. Man's side or responsibility is to respond to God's provision of Grace by releasing faith in God- Faith: Acting on what you believe in your heart in regards to God's promises, and provisions of grace. Grace is God's gift to man, but it is through faith, that one receives the gift- God's grace gives, and our faith in God receives these gifts from his hand.

Romans 10:16-21

But not all the Israelites accepted the good news. For Isaiah says, “Lord, who has believed our message?” Consequently, faith comes from hearing the message, and the message is heard through the word of Christ. But I ask: Did they not hear? Of course they did: “Their voice has gone out into all the earth, their words to the ends of the world.” Again I ask: Did Israel not understand? First, Moses says, “I will make you envious by those who are not a nation; I will make you angry by a nation that has no understanding.” And Isaiah boldly says, “I was found by those who did not seek me; I revealed myself to those who did not ask for me.” But concerning Israel he says, **“All day long I have held out my hands to a disobedient and obstinate people.”**

God’s Side = Grace / Man’s Side = Faith

God’s grace makes salvation available for all mankind, but by itself, it’s not enough for man to be saved. Remember, there is a God-ward side and man-ward side to everything we receive from God. God through Christ reconciled all men unto Himself according to Colossians 1:19-20. We know that God is not willing that any should perish- 1 Timothy 2:3-4, *“This is good, and pleases God our Savior, who wants all men to be saved and to come to a knowledge of the truth.”* God has made salvation available to all mankind to be saved, but not everyone is going to be saved- Why? There are many reasons, but one mandatory reason is that it takes faith to receive this free gift of salvation. Faith comes by hearing the good news of the gospel as explained in Romans chapter 10. Since faith begins where the will of God is known, people can’t release faith in something they don’t know exists- *“who wants all men to be saved and to come to a knowledge of the truth.”*

Faith for salvation comes by hearing the message of salvation through Jesus Christ. When an individual hears, believes, and confesses (The Word of Faith Principle), Jesus as his/her Lord, and believes that God has raised Him from the dead, God’s grace that has been available for 2,000 year, since the resurrection of Jesus, is at that moment released into this individuals spirit. As a result, the work of regeneration is appropriated by the Holy Spirit (Titus 3:5), who was waiting for him/her to release faith in the promise of God’s grace. I don’t know about you, but it sure helps me by drawing a line of distinction as to who is responsible for what, when it comes to receiving from God.

The gospel is an invitation, not an automatic conscription. The first step is to hear the Word, but then it’s up to us to receive it through faith. The gospel of the Promised Land was preached to the people of Israel, but the first generation failed to enter in except Joshua and Caleb, because those who heard it failed to mix faith with the message- they failed to act on what they believed. They choose to embrace fear and doubt, and because of their unbelief, they died in the wilderness. Was that God’s will, of course not. God had done His part by providing the grace, but they rejected it, and in their hearts turned back to Egypt. They failed to connect their faith with God’s grace, and so missed out on God’s rest. So whose fault was it, God’s or man’s? What can we learn from this example? Sobering isn’t it? Let’s take heed to 1 Corinthians 10:1-11, and not likewise fall by following their example of disobedience/lack of faith.

Romans 3:3-4- What if some did not have faith? Will their **lack of faith nullify God's faithfulness? Not at all! Let God be true, and every man a liar.**

Hebrews 4:1-3- Therefore, since the promise of entering his rest still stands, let us be careful that none of you be found to have fallen short of it. For we also have had the gospel preached to us, just as they did; but the message they heard was of no value to them, because those who heard **did not combine it with faith. Now we who have believed enter that rest.**

2. Faith Releases God's Grace

Receiving from God is not automatic; I wish it was, it sure would be convenient- then I would not have to do anything. But it takes faith on our part to receive anything from God. Faith is not passive or dormant, even when we are waiting for the answer, we stand by faith in eager expectation and thanksgiving. However, faith is not to be confused with works. Religion makes a feeble attempt to buy God off by offering good works in order to earn or deserve right standing with God- like Cain, just filthy rags of self-righteousness, Isaiah 64:6.

Of course this is all ludicrous, because the penalty of sin is death, and all have sinned; therefore, apart from Jesus, all mankind is condemned to hell. Good works after the crime makes as much sense as a criminal on death row trying to get out of his sentence by good behavior- it's too late at that point.

For mankind it's also too late, we need a savior! However, this Savior can't be from this world, because all of mankind has been guilty of sin. This Savior has to be perfect, one who has never sinned, yet He must become a man on earth in order to die in our place as the ultimate sacrifice and scapegoat for our sins. That is exactly what God did. The Word became flesh, and dwelled among us, as the sinless, spotless Son of God, Jesus Christ of Nazareth, full of grace and truth- John 1:1-18, 29. Jesus is the Word, the grace of God in the flesh. That same grace that was present in Him physically 2,000 years ago (Luke 6:19) is the same grace that is contained in His written Word today (John 6:63), as recorded in the Bible- 2 Peter 1:20-21. The same power that was present in Jesus, is the same power that is found today in God's Words as recorded in the Bible- Hebrews 4:12.

Acts 20:32

“Now I commit you to God and to the word of his grace, which can build you up and give you an inheritance among all those who are sanctified.”

2 Peter 1:2-4

Grace and peace be yours in abundance through the knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord. His divine power has given us everything we need for life and godliness through our knowledge of him who called us by his own glory and goodness. Through these he has given us his very great and precious promises, so that through them you may participate in the divine nature and escape the corruption in the world caused by evil desires.

Jesus is no longer on the earth in physical form as He was 2,000 years ago, but He is alive and well at the right hand of the Father. God's grace for us today is found by releasing faith in His Word, and by releasing faith through prayer- Hebrews 4:16; James 5:15. Releasing faith in God's Words is releasing faith in God personally. We do not have to see God face to face in order to receive from Him. God has given us the promises in His Word by which we can release faith in them, and receive the necessary grace and provision for our daily lives.

It is only through faith that we will receive anything from God. Some people believe that grace is just God's willingness to do something for us. Some folks will say, “if He is willing He will save us, if He is willing He will heal us, everything is up to God, there is nothing I can do about it. If I ever get anything from God it is only by His doing, I don't have anything to do with it. I can't do anything to persuade Him one way or the other- whatever shall be shall be, Selah.” That is a fine example of religious fatalism and misguided sovereignty ideology that is unbiblical and is rooted in Calvinism. Unfortunately, such a passive posture is not Biblical, and it's sure not faith. This is a dangerous position to take, because it opens the door to the devil to pour a bunch of junk into folks lives.

This religious person like Job, will say, “Well the Lord giveth, and the Lord taketh away, blessed be the name of the Lord”, all the while Satan is killing, stealing, and destroying them; and they think it’s Jesus doing it to them. This deception paralyzes their faith to resist the devil since they think it’s from God, teaching them patience through suffering- don’t want to resist God right? Yet these same folks will go to the doctor and pay good money to get out of God’s will for them. We need to examine everything that comes into our lives in light of the Scriptures, and if it does not line up with God’s standard of living (John 10:10), then reject it. If we have need of anything, let’s release faith in God’s grace that has already been provided, and receive our needs met according to His precious promises.

Galatians 3:22

So that what was promised, being given through faith in Jesus Christ, might be given to those who believe.

Hebrews 6:12

We do not want you to become lazy, but to imitate those who through faith and patience inherit what has been promised.

Let’s look at a Bible example of a man who heard of Jesus, and knowing He was full of God’s grace, and truth, decided to plug his faith into the power source, and receive his healing. The man could have just sat there and let Jesus pass him by. So many Christians just sit in their problems, living like a beggar, never releasing their faith in the promises of God and just let the answer pass them by. What do you need from God, start finding promises in the Bible that cover your need, and start mixing faith with the Word of His grace. Faith will release the grace in God’s Word to meet your every need, but you have a part to play. It is your faith in God’s Word that releases His grace into your life.

Mark 10:46-52

Then they came to Jericho. As Jesus and his disciples, together with a large crowd, were leaving the city, a blind man, Bartimaeus (that is, the Son of Timaeus), was sitting by the roadside begging. When he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to shout, “Jesus, Son of David, have mercy on me!” Many rebuked him and told him to be quiet, but he shouted all the more, “Son of David, have mercy on me!” Jesus stopped and said, “Call him.” So they called to the blind man, “Cheer up! On your feet! He’s calling you.” Throwing his cloak aside, he jumped to his feet and came to Jesus. “What do you want me to do for you?” Jesus asked him. The blind man said, “Rabbi, I want to see.” “Go,” said Jesus, “your faith has healed you.” Immediately he received his sight and followed Jesus along the road.

Luke 8:43-48

And a woman was there who had been subject to bleeding for twelve years, but no one could heal her. She came up behind him and touched the edge of his cloak, and immediately her bleeding stopped. “Who touched me?” Jesus asked. When they all denied it, Peter said, “Master, the people are crowding and pressing against you.” But Jesus said, “Someone touched me; I know that power has gone out from me.” Then the woman, seeing that she could not go unnoticed, came trembling and fell at his feet. In the presence of all the people, she told why she had touched him and how she had been instantly healed. Then he said to her, “Daughter, your faith has healed you. Go in peace.”

God’s Grace Responds To Our Faith!

“Through Faith” Scriptures:

Romans 3:22, 25; 5:1
Galatians 3:22, 26
Ephesians 2:8; 3:12, 17
Philippians 3:19
2 Timothy 3:15
Hebrews 6:12; 11:33
1 Peter 1:5

“By Grace” Scriptures:

Acts 18:27
Romans 4:16, 11:5-6
Ephesians 2:5, 8
Hebrews 13:9

**Through
Faith We
Receive!**

Prayer



Needs

**Christian
Service**

Why is faith so important? Without faith, it is impossible to receive anything from God, or obey His commands. Faith is the spiritual arm of the Christian, that receives from God, and enables us to serve Him. The boxes above, represent the various aspects of a believer's life. The power cloud, represents the unlimited source of God's grace that has been made available by the completed work of Jesus in His death, burial, and resurrection to the right hand of the Father.

The line that connects our needs to God's grace is our faith. Only through faith will we make a divine connection, that will tap us into God's grace and power. God's grace is like spiritual electricity that flows through the cord of faith into our life. Without the electrical cord of faith to plug us into the power, we are nothing but a lifeless object. The moment we begin to plug our prayers, needs, and service through faith into God's grace, we will begin to function by the power of God- He is waiting on us.

G. According to Your Faith

I realize that this lesson may be perceived as a little controversial, and in the opinion of some, the content may seem erroneous. None the less, I ask you to be open to what God's Word plainly states. Folks may disagree with my interpretation of Biblical principles, but it's hard to argue with Scripture that makes these principles so plain. I am not suggesting that we live for God independently trying to work out our salvation. On the contrary, my aim is to point out the absolute necessity of trusting in God, and His grace to put us over in life.

We cannot ignore the obvious precedence that Jesus makes so clear throughout the gospels. Therefore, I am really excited to unveil this Biblical text that will absolutely blow open the doors to new possibilities for our lives. By the way, this is not hype concerning what I just said, because I am speaking from personal experience. It would take volumes to explain how the principles of faith have changed my life for God's glory- besides when Jesus said all things are possible to them who believe, it's because they are- Mark 9:23, "*If you can'? said Jesus. Everything is possible for him who believes.*"

Matthew 9:27-29

As Jesus went on from there, two blind men followed him, calling out, "Have mercy on us, Son of David!" When he had gone indoors, the blind men came to him, and he asked them, "Do you believe that I am able to do this?" "Yes, Lord," they replied. Then he touched their eyes and said, "According to your faith will it be done to you**"; and their sight was restored. Jesus warned them sternly, "See that no one knows about this."**

I like how the Amplified Bible puts the phrase I highlighted in the above verse, "*According to your faith and trust and reliance [on the power invested in Me] be it done to you.*" This lesson really tests our theology concerning the reasons why, and why we don't receive our prayers and confessions of faith answered. I have been personally guilty of rationalizing why I did not receive a prayer answered from God. I have to admit, I have been tempted to spiritualize the situation rather than to admit that I missed God in some way. It's really pride and a copout on my part to suggest that it must not be God's will for a promise from God's Word not to come to pass- when God's Word can't fail. When faith does not seem to work, it's always my fault, I did not work it correctly and follow the directions as plainly outlined in the Word. So instead of accusing God of failure, rather I should ask God for wisdom to change.

What I mean by "I Missed God" is that we are the variables of whether or not a prayer is answered. I believe God is sovereign in the areas the Bible says He is sovereign, like the rapture, the great white throne, Satan being cast into the lake of fire etc. Nothing in all creation can change those Biblical events from coming to pass!

However, when it comes to personal events in the life of the believer, we have everything to do with our prayers and confessions of the Word from coming to pass or not. When it comes to our inheritance in Christ, God has left it up to us to press in possess all His precious promises and provision. As the gift of eternal life was receive by faith, all His other gifts are not automatic, but must be believed upon as well.

It is totally conceivable for a Christian who loves God and is dearly loved by God, to go through life never experiencing the first fruits of his/her inheritance. Tragically, this situation is quite common in the body of Christ. The reasons for this distressing state that believers in the Lord Jesus Christ find themselves in are many. I would like to suggest three general categories that we all find ourselves in that may be hindering us from receiving God's best for our lives:

1) Lack of Knowledge

Hosea 4:6- *"My people are destroyed from a lack of knowledge."* This principle is true in any arena of life, but it is especially true concerning spiritual things. We cannot experience what we do not know exists. We cannot receive what we do not know is available. This simple issue of ignorance is remedied by being enlightened with revelation knowledge from God's Word.

2) Disobedience

Isaiah 1:19- *"If you are willing and obedient, you will eat the best from the land; but if you resist and rebel, you will be devoured by the sword."* It does not take a rocket scientist to see the simple contrast made between a life of obedience and a life of disobedience. Unfortunately, believers who tolerate habitual sin in their own lives will not see the answer to their prayers. The solution to this obstacle is godly repentance according to 2 Corinthians 7:8-11 and 1 John 1:9.

3) Lack Of Faith

Matthew 9:29- **"According to your faith will it be done to you"** WOW! So many Christians retire themselves from doing anything in their Christian life or to receive anything more from God except the new birth. They sit back in their spiritual "Lazy Boy" recliner waiting for their ship of God's blessings to come by. Unfortunately, they will be waiting a long time. Correct me if I am wrong, but Jesus is saying that our faith will determine whether or not what we desire from God will be given to us or not- Let's look into this premise a little further.

1. God is Looking at your Faith, not at your Need

That may sound harsh and insensitive, and out of character of God to do such a thing. However, I do not discount acts of mercy that God will spontaneously grant on occasion, but when we study the life and ministry of Jesus, if people received their need met it was because of their faith in the Son of God, and not the severity of their need. Some people believe if they can just get pitiful enough, God will be benevolent, and feel sorry for them. Yes, on occasion God will do that, but remember Hebrews 11:6, states that faith pleases God, not whining, pleading, and begging.

The Principles Of Faith Work For All God's Children Who Work Them- Without Partiality or Favoritism!

A) An Example of a Spiritual Handout

I would venture to say that during the Lord's ministry on the earth, He sometimes performed a miracle on someone's behalf without faith- about one out of ten times. The other nine were in response to the individual's faith.

John 5:1-16

Sometime later, Jesus went up to Jerusalem for a feast of the Jews. Now there is in Jerusalem near the Sheep Gate a pool, which in Aramaic is called Bethesda and which is surrounded by five covered colonnades. Here a great number of disabled people used to lie- the blind, the lame, the paralyzed. One who was there had been an invalid for thirty-eight years. When Jesus saw him lying there and learned that he had been in this condition for a long time, he asked him, **"Do you want to get well?"** "Sir," the invalid replied, "I have no one to help me into the pool when the water is stirred. While I am trying to get in, someone else goes down ahead of me." Then Jesus said to him, **"Get up! Pick up your mat and walk."** At once the man was cured; he picked up his mat and walked.

The day on which this took place was a Sabbath, and so the Jews said to the man who had been healed, **"It is the Sabbath; the law forbids you to carry your mat."** But he replied, **"The man who made me well said to me, 'Pick up your mat and walk.'**" So they asked him, **"Who is this fellow who told you to pick it up and walk?"** The man who was healed had no idea who it was, for Jesus had slipped away into the crowd that was there. Later Jesus found him at the temple and said to him, **"See, you are well again. Stop sinning or something worse may happen to you."** The man went away and told the Jews that it was Jesus who had made him well. So, because Jesus was doing these things on the Sabbath, the Jews persecuted him.

Notice the question that Jesus had posed to this man **"Do you want to get well?"** The casual observer might think, **"What a stupid question, of course the man wants to get well!"** However, Jesus was trying to provoke the man into faith so that He could heal him, since 90% of the people under His ministry received their healing that way. It is easy to detect the **"Whine"** in this man's voice as he responded to Jesus question. He did not even answer the simple question. God, moved with compassion healed the man even though he did not have an ounce of faith- he didn't even recognize that it was Jesus.

Unfortunately, it didn't do him any good, because we see later that Jesus warned him, about giving into peer pressure from the Jews. At the rate this man was going, he was going to lose his healing and get something worse. Here is a reality check folks, the faith we use to get our healing, is the same faith that will keep us healed. Free-bee's from God are seldom kept, because what gets us healed, keeps us healed. Therefore, Jesus would rather teach us how to fish, than just give us a fish. The Father God expects us to grow up in the Lord, and learn to exercise our faith and no longer be spiritual babies, crying out to God to be spoon fed. Let's grow up, and go out and feed others in Jesus Name- Hebrews 5:11- 6:3!

The Same Faith That Gets You Healed Will Keep You Healed!

Faith, or a Lack of it Makes the Difference in Every Situation!

Scripture	Type of faith	Biblical Occurrence	Jesus' Response
Mt 8:13	Great	Faith of the Centurion for his servant	"It will be done just as you believed it would"
Mt 9:29	Great	Two blind men receive their sight	"According to your faith, be it done to you"
Mt 14:36	Great	The woman with the issue of blood	"Your faith has healed you"
Mk 10:52	Great	Blind Bartimaeus receives his sight	"Go, your faith has healed you"
Lk 17:19	Great	The 10 men with leprosy	"Rise and go; your faith has made you well"
Lk 7:50	Great	A sinful woman is forgiven	"Your faith has saved you; go in peace"
Mt 15:28	Great	A Canaanite woman cries out to Jesus	"Have great faith! Your request is granted"
Mt 14:36	Great	Begged to just touch Jesus' cloak	All who touched him were healed.
Mt 8:24	Little	Sleeping in a boat during a storm	"You of little faith, why are you so afraid"
Mt 14:27	Little	Jesus walking on the water and Peter	"You of little faith, why did you doubt"
Mt 6:30	Little	God's provision for us	"You of little faith. Don't worry"
Mt 16:8	Little	Just fed the 5000- disciples doubt	"You of little faith..."
Mt 17:19-20	Little	"Why couldn't we drive it out?"	"Because you have so little faith"
Mt 13:58	Lack	Shut down in home town	Not many miracles there- Lack of faith
Mt 16:14	Lack	Doubted the Lord's resurrection	Jesus rebuked them for their lack of faith

2. Write your own Ticket with God

2 Peter 1:2-4

Grace and peace be yours in abundance through the knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord. His divine power has given us everything we need for life and godliness through our knowledge of him who called us by his own glory and goodness. Through these he has given us his very great and precious promises, so that through them you may participate in the divine nature and escape the corruption in the world caused by evil desires.



We are responsible for the bed we lay in, not God. The Lord has given us all things that pertain to life and godliness, so it's ourselves not God that limits our experiences with Him. God has given us a blank check to fill out. The measure of faith we have on deposit in our lives, is the measure of withdrawals we can

make on the bank of heaven. This blank check is described in Mark 9:23, "Everything is possible for him who believes" and Luke 11:40, "Then Jesus said, 'Did I not tell you that if you believed, you would see the glory of God?'" What is the only catch in these two Scriptures? That is right, "Only Believe!" Romans 12:3, says we have all received the measure of faith, now it's up to us to increase that measure of faith so God can do more in our lives according to 2 Corinthians 10:15.

A) Our Faith Determines the Outcome in Every Situation

Matthew 14:31

Immediately Jesus reached out his hand and caught him. “You of little faith,” he said, “why did you doubt?”

Remember Peter walking on the water, what started out in faith ended in defeat because of doubt. It was not God’s will for Peter to sink, but he did because he got his eyes off of Jesus, and onto the circumstances around him. There are reasons why Christians fail in life, and it’s not because of some mysterious, sovereign plan of God. As in this case, sometimes it’s a simple case of a lack of faith.

B) Little Faith = Little Withdrawals

Mark 6:5-6

He could not do any miracles there, except lay his hands on a few sick people and heal them. And he was amazed at their lack of faith. Then Jesus went around teaching from village to village.

Notice the Scripture does not say that Jesus, “Would not” but that he “Could not,” implying even if He wanted to, their lack of faith limited the demonstration of the Spirit’s power. So often this is the case, God wants to bless His children so badly, but their lack of faith limits Him to just a few sporadic healings of minor alignments. There is so much more God wants to do in our midst, but it takes His people agreeing with His Word through faith- Mark 16:20.

C) Great Faith = Great Withdrawals

Matthew 8:5-13

When Jesus had entered Capernaum, a centurion came to him, asking for help. “Lord,” he said, “my servant lies at home paralyzed and in terrible suffering.” Jesus said to him, “I will go and heal him.” The centurion replied, “Lord, I do not deserve to have you come under my roof. But just say the word, and my servant will be healed. For I myself am a man under authority, with soldiers under me. I tell this one, ‘Go,’ and he goes; and that one, ‘Come,’ and he comes. I say to my servant, ‘Do this,’ and he does it.” When Jesus heard this, he was astonished and said to those following him, “I tell you the truth, I have not found anyone in Israel with such great faith. I say to you that many will come from the east and the west, and will take their places at the feast with Abraham, Isaac and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven. But the subjects of the kingdom will be thrown outside, into the darkness, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.” Then Jesus said to the centurion, “Go! It will be done just as you believed it would.” And his servant was healed at that very hour.

Isn’t it amazing how Jesus tied the individual’s faith as the cause for the answer they received. This principle is demonstrated time after time. It is undeniable, the very words of Jesus make it plain. Now the choice is ours, are we going to hold onto our traditions concerning faith and receiving from God, or are we going to stand on the authority of God’s Word. The bottom line is, if we want to see results to our prayers and confessions of God’s Word, we must do them from a posture of faith, and not from need or desperation. It’s the hand of faith that receives, not the beggar’s “Whines” and “Cries.” God has bestowed upon us the honor of son-ship, by His grace we are no longer sinners, but children of the most high God. The sooner we get our minds renewed to this fact, the sooner we can start eating at the king’s table instead of under the table barking for crumbs. I say all this not to be brash or arrogant, but to startle us to wake up to God’s invitation to a exciting new journey with him on the road of faith!

Units 13 Review:

Why is the “Law of Love” so crucial to the Biblical operation of Faith?

What major role does “Hope” play in conjunction with Faith?

Explain the Biblical implications to the principle of “By Grace Through Faith?”

Why did Jesus put so much emphasis on the individual’s faith to receive from God?

What are three reasons, why people fail to receive from God?

What does it mean to write your own ticket with God?
